COPTIC GRAMMATICAL CHRESTOMATHY

A Course for Academic and Private Study
1. E. LIPIŃSKI, Studies in Aramaic Inscriptions and Onomastics I.
2. J. QUAEGERBEUR, Le dieu égyptien Shaï dans la religion et l'onomastique.
6. E. LIPIŃSKI (ed.), State and Temple Economy in the Ancient Near East II.
14. E. PLATTI, Yahyā ibn 'Adī, théologien chrétien et philosophe arabe.
17. M. VAN MOL, Handboek Modern Arabisch.
22. E. LIPIŃSKI (ed.), Phoenicia and the East Mediterranean in the First Millennium B.C.
27. E. VERREEFT, Eine morpho-syntaktische Abhandlung über das Modalsystem im Ugaritischen.
COPTIC
GRAMMATICAL CHRESTOMATHY

A COURSE FOR ACADEMIC AND PRIVATE STUDY

EDITED BY
A. SHISHA-HALEVY

PEETERS
LEUVEN
1988
For my parents
TABLE OF CONTENTS

INTRODUCTORY NOTES. Aims and conception; text sources; selection policy and arrangement; structure of the Chrestomathy; technical information, editorial policy, terminology; guide-lines and practical suggestions for the student; Egyptian and Coptic  

SCHEMATIC STRUCTURAL OUTLINE OF THE CHRESTOMATHY  

THE ALPHABET  

GLOSSARY PRACTICE  

FIRST PART (units I-VI, sections 1-26): THE FORMAL-FUNCTIONAL SYSTEM  
Unit I: The noun phrase (noun and verb lexemes), the Nominal Sentence, the Proper Name (sections 1-4); the adverb phrase (section 5)  
Unit II: The tense-base conjugation ("Tripartite" pattern); the imperative; the causative conjugation (sections 6-11)  
Unit III: Presentative and existential clauses (sections 12-14)  
Unit IV: The durative ("Bipartite") conjugation (sections 15-18)  
Unit V: The adverb predicated (sections 19-21)  
Unit VI: Synthetic conjugation forms with suffixed subject (sections 22-26)  

SECOND PART (units I-IV, sections 27-51): TOPICS OF ADVANCED SYNTAX  
Unit I: Conversion  
A. The circumstantial conversion (sections 27-30)  
B. The relative conversion (sections 31-33)  
C. The "Second Tense" conversion (sections 34-38)  
D. The preterite conversion (sections 39-41)  
Unit II: The conjunctive (sections 42-43)  
Unit III: Conditional and related constructions (sections 44-48)  
Unit IV: The infinitive outside conjugation (sections 49-51)  

THIRD PART: ASSORTED UNCLASSIFIED TEXTS (graded according to difficulty)  

TABLES: A. PRONOUNS (articles, demonstratives, personal pronouns)  

1  
3  
32  
62  
72  
94  
101  
111  
113  
113  
120  
128  
134  
142  
147  
152  
157  
168
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Section</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>B. Nominal Sentence patterns</td>
<td>172</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C. The base (&quot;tripartite&quot;) conjugation</td>
<td>175</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>D. The causative conjugation</td>
<td>180</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>E. Existential and possessive statements</td>
<td>182</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>F. The durative conjugation</td>
<td>184</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>G. The converters</td>
<td>194</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>H. The &quot;adjective verbs&quot;</td>
<td>196</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>I. Lexical verb morphology</td>
<td>197</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>J. Classification</td>
<td>199</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Glossary</td>
<td>202</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bibliography</td>
<td>257</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Index to the grammatical terms</td>
<td>260</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Terminological glossary and correspondence-list</td>
<td>261</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
COPTIC GRAMMATICAL CHRESTOMATHY
( THE SAHIDIC DIALECT)
of Sahidic grammatical structure. It is extensive, authentic (i.e. untranslated), idiomatic and as idiolectic a text as one can wish for. Although Scripture Coptic seems often less complicated for beginners, this easiness is usually paid for with a heavy price of helplessness and feeling of unfamiliarity when leaving this textual hothouse, and may, I believe, be compensated for by thoughtful selection and proper arrangement of the material. The student who approaches the Coptic Scriptures after studying the Chrestomathy will find them relatively unproblematic and easy to tackle. I have here drawn from the major published editions as well as some unpublished fragments of Shenoute's opus.

(3) Selection Policy and Arrangement. This Chrestomathy (originally inspired by J. Strachan's Old Irish Paradigms and Selections from the Old Irish Glosses, Dublin 1904-5 and often reprinted since, and H.B. Rosén's Specimens of Gothic (Gothic and Hebrew; the Hebrew University Department of Linguistics, for private circulation) is constructed on the principles of cumulativeness (progressive advance, gradation of difficulty, ever-increasing extent of analysis) and system scanning. A prime principle — one which, in conjunction with the other two makes selection so very difficult — is non-interference with the text: the least omission or gapping for reasons of difficulty or complexity, no "editing". The student must get acquainted at just the right conjunction with the elements requisite to assure his progress to analyzing more complex units. I have tried hard not to leave out the exemplification of any constituent element of phrase or clause, although completeness of the system depicted is, of course, not feasible and not aimed for. Such phenomena as are not treated in a special section or sub-section of texts are usually commented on in notes, and may be recovered by using the subject index. The choice of texts aims at a varied and "capricious" illustration, to ensure as realistic a textual experience as possible and recapture the feeling of a natural and context-dependent text, counter-effecting the classifiedness and metatextual "paradigmatic" feel, and convey a taste of actual complexity. Redundance — repetition of texts and notes — is programmatic, for the sake of reviewing, solidifying familiarity and observing grammatical features from several different aspects, in different contexts and different grades of resolution, as well as letting autodidacts enjoy something like a teacher's patient attention. An impression of relative statistical importance is meant to be given by the quantitative difference in strength of illustration, with "flooding" for certain topics such as noun determination and the main tenses.
"Imports" from outside the corpus are as a rule avoided (except for one or two cases): rarity or non-attestation is no less important than attestation as a piece of grammatical information. Note that the grammatical opinion reflected in the classification and selection, although hopefully not distorted, is often practical and idealizing: typologies and "pigeonholes" are made out to be sharper and clearer than they really are. Inside a section or sub-section, the arrangement is consciously not consistently progressive: easier or simpler constructions are repeated further on, and more difficult ones are tentatively introduced early on and revisited later. This is once again meant to reproduce the variety and randomness of the natural text, but also to allow for reviewing and relaxation. Note that the presented arrangement of the texts is merely a suggestion: the student or teacher may opt for a different, individually suited sequence of work and rate of progress, or decide to skip texts for various reasons.

An asterisk (*) marks sections that may be skipped and revisited at a more advanced stage; in the Bibliography it marks reading recommended for advanced students.

(4) The structure of the chrestomathy. The first part consists of six units (I-VI) comprising 26 sections, and scans systematically and exhaustively the formal and basically functional phenomena relating to the noun syntagm (including Nominal Sentence patterns), the verb system (the base and durative conjugations, alias Tripartite and Bipartite, imperative, causative conjugation, etc.) as well as adverb predication. The converters are first introduced here in their full formal and main functional scope.

The second part of four units (VII-X), sections 27-51, revisits, in considerably complicating detail and better resolution, special topics chosen for their difficulty and/or their systemic significance: conversion; the conjunctive; conditional complexes; the extra-conjugational infinitive.

The third part consists wholly of assorted texts of advanced syntax, arranged in ascending order of difficulty (complexity and extent, graded I-III) and assuming acquaintance with the first two parts. It is meant to consolidate and test the competence acquired earlier, by and combinatory reviewing of texts and by exposure to the full range of «facts or life» of la parole, such as redundancy, anacoluthia and plain difficulty of construction. Here the student is to be weaned from specialization and the feeling of predictability, and is left on his own to identify and place grammatical "irregularities" and plumb new syntactic depths. Here, too,
his analytic sensitivity is put to the test by some texts in *scriptio continua*.

The textual parts are followed by the instruments of work and reference: *TABLES OF GRAMMATICAL AND LEXICAL MORPHOLOGY, GLOSSARIES* (lexemic, onomastic and morphemic), INDEX TO THE GRAMM. NOTES, TERMINOLOGICAL GLOSSARY AND CORRESPONDENCE LIST, BIBLIOGRAPHY.

(5) TECHNICAL INFORMATION. EDITORIAL POLICY. TERMINOLOGY
(a) SECTION HEADINGS and INTRODUCTORY REMARKS should be taken as no more than minimal general information considered requisite to tackle the following Coptic texts, and are not precise grammatical statement or resumes (reference to tables is assumed). The bibliographical references are selective (mostly to current grammars, textbooks or monographical treatments; suggestions for advanced reading are marked by an asterisk).
(b) The individual texts themselves may be followed by any or both of two types of mega-textual annotation:
   “NB”: basic specific information requisite for dealing with the relevant text — bridging information gaps, often anticipating later illustration.
   “OBS.”: notes of broader grammatical perspective or deeper import; some advance information; drawing attention to unexemplified features.

The annotation serves the additional purpose of anticipating further information; also of accustoming the student to alternative terminologies and statement formulations, from different aspects of the analysis. (I attribute great importance to this: the student should be made to realize at an early stage that terms are not “correct” or absolute, but always provisional, tentative and approximative.)
(c) The original ORTHOGRAPHY is as a rule not tampered with, with two exceptions: MS punctuation is not reproduced (except for some cases in Part III); the supralineation is standardized and “average”. (No Western punctuation is used, save occasionally the full stop (.) to separate several illustrations of the same feature in one text and rarely three full stops (…) to mark absolutely unavoidable omissions).
(d) MORPH-SEPARENTING DASHES (·) are introduced in the earlier parts of the chrestomathy when this is considered helpful, on early encounters of new morphs or in such syntagms as are especially complex or contain “elusive” affixes; their use is a function of the expected difficulty in isolating the affix and its environment as well as of the stage of progress. Consistency is here not aimed for, and always overruled by didactic considerations.
(e) **TERMINOLOGY:** I have innovated rarely, and only in cases of a terminological vacuum, or when the existing/traditional terms are patently inadequate or misleading. Terminological definitions (or rather explanations) and English-German-French correspondences are listed at the end of the book. Acquaintance with other languages or a general (theoretical) linguistic basis is not presupposed, although this will prove a distinct advantage in many ways and is strongly recommended.

(f) **GLOSSARY:** the lexical glossary combines native and Greek lexemes as well as the Proper Names in the following order (under each letter): Coptic — Greek — Proper Names. (See the Glossary Practice, which is also meant to practise the resolution of words into these classes).

(6) Here is a series of **GUIDE-LINES and PRACTICAL SUGGESTIONS** for the student, especially for the one who uses this Chrestomathy by himself/herself, without the benefit of a teacher’s guidance. **These should be read carefully before commencing the study of the texts.**

(a) Before starting, have a free-leaf notebook ready, in which you enter new grammatical information as you go along, arranged roughly by conventional textbook headings ("the Noun", "Nominal Sentence", "the Verb" — with subdivisions as required); index every single morph (also difficult lexical items!) you come across, referring them to the relevant pages in your "grammar". You will find this grammatical record, built up gradually and without omission, a worthwhile investment of effort: you will have a reliable grammatical sketch to use when stepping outside the scope of the chrestomathy to tackle new texts.

(b) **READ THE TEXTS ALoud at least twice — once before your analysis and translation of them, once afterwards.**

(c) Read the notes (if any) only after you have done your best to analyse and translate the text without help. Consult the "NB" notes first, the "OBS." notes after completing the translation; if possible, look the bibliographical references up when you are at least half-way through the section.

(d) In the actual analysis, try to separate (a well-sharpened pencil is best for the purpose) the lexical from the grammatical component of an isolated string of elements; then subdivide the components of the grammatical "cluster" of elements, which will usually precede the lexical one, locating the grammatical units ("grammemes"), one by one, in the index. At the first stages of your progress, **MAKE A POINT OF ALWAYS LOOKING UP THE GRAMMEMES IN THE GLOSSARY — DO NOT RELY ON YOUR**
MEMORY. Full use of the Tables and Glossaries is presupposed: these are your instruments of study.
(e) Once you have isolated the lexical elements in your word or text, you will have to decide whether they are of Greek or native Coptic origin (there are two separate glossaries for each of these categories). If you are unfamiliar with Greek, make a note of the following terminations of lexemes, characteristic of the Greek element in Coptic: masculines -os (-ος), -on (-ον), -on (-ων), -es (-ες) -eus (-εύς), -ma (-μα); feminines -a (-ά), -ia (-ία) -e (-ε), -is (-ίς) -sis (-σίς) for nouns: -e (-ε), -e1 (-ε1), -a (-ά) and -ou (-ον) for verb lexemes. Greek-origin prepositions, particles, adverbs, conjunctions are relatively few; make a point of looking them up in the Greek glossary. (Note that the Greek lists (glossary and index) are combined, under each letter, in the following order: native elements — Greek elements — proper names); generally speaking, the “phonemic image” of the Greek element of the lexicon (and that of proper names) differs sharply from the native one, and with some practice you should have little trouble on that score. Consulting a Greek dictionary (the smaller or medium-sized Liddell-Scott will do) is suggested, when you acquire sufficient confidence in uncovering the grammatical structure of the material; the use of a special Patristic Greek dictionary (e.g. Lampe) is of course recommended.
(f) By Coptic lexicographical convention, the Coptic lexemes are arranged in the Glossary, as in Semitic, by radicals — i.e. first by consonants and only then by the alphabetic vowel sequence for every consonant. (NB: the semi-vowels u/w (υ, ου) and i/y (ι, ει) count as consonants when they are radical) or vowels (when they are not). If you are unfamiliar with this system, invest some time in studying the Glossary and getting to understand why any given lexeme is where you find it. Following the alphabet, you will find a list of Greek-Coptic and Egyptian-Coptic Proper Names, nouns and verbs (occurring in the texts) for you to look up in the Glossary as a preliminary exercise. Again, note that the Greek elements follow the native Coptic ones under each letter in the Glossary; the Proper Names come last.
(g) Transitive verbs are entered in the Glossary under their absolute (object-less) infinitive form, which you will often be expected to reconstruct from the actual form in your text, where the verb may be combined with a nominal or pronominal direct object, or where you may have its Stative (Qualitative) form; consult Table 1, and copy the «principal parts» of the verbs you isolate — absolute, pre-nominal ("construct") and pre-pronominal ("pronominal") infinitive as well as stative, if any.
(h) **Do not approximate. Never compromise** and settle for a less than a formally and semantically satisfactory analysis and identification of entities. If you cannot identify one grammeme, try another; if you have unsuccessfully tried all, do not brood on the text you have found difficult (do not allot more than, say, twenty minutes to any single item in Part One) but proceed, returning to it after two or three texts. **Start by identifying grammatical elements**: they are fewer and semantically more clear-cut than lexemes, and will help you decide whether to look for a noun or a verb in the Glossary.

(i) Although you may use the glossary for the whole course of the Chrestomathy, you should try and graduate to using a full-scale dictionary (Crum's *Coptic Dictionary* is best) as soon as possible — not, however, approximately before you master Part One. When using a dictionary and even our Glossary, never settle for the first meaning offered for the lexeme, but peruse the entry, accumulating meanings and subsequently deciding on the one most suiting your context. It is suggested you copy out the «principal parts» of verb lexemes into a list in your own grammatical sketch.

(j) If you work alone, try to proceed in the given order of texts. Do not skip unless you come up against some insurmountable difficulty with a text or feel you are familiar with the illustrated phenomena: the texts have been carefully selected and arranged with a view to illustrating in a reasoned order various essential aspects of grammar. **Do not rush! Set yourself a quota of texts or time of study and do not exceed it. (Twice-weekly sessions is the lowest desirable frequency at early stages). If possible, proceed at a steady rate.**

(k) For various reasons which cannot be enumerated here, I advise against freely consulting “grammatical opinion”, i.e. using conventional or handy grammar-books or textbooks (beyond the “BIBLIOGRAPHY” recommendations), at least before a text-based “feeling of the language” and some degree of critical faculty are developed.

(7) Sahidic ("Dialect S") was the main and largely representative dialect of Coptic, the language of Egyptian Christendom and last phase of the Egyptian language, of which the main stages are (partly overlapping as spoken/written idioms):

(a) script: Hieroglyphic and its cursive form, Hieratic:
- Old Egyptian (from about 3000 B.C.)
- Middle Egyptian (from about 2000 B.C.)
- Late Egyptian (from about 1300 B.C.)
(b) Script: Demotic (very cursive Hieratic, often interlaced into groups): Demotic (Persian, Ptolemaic and Roman, from about 700 B.C.)
(c) Script: Coptic-Greek:
Coptic (from the 3rd century A.D.; died out as a spoken language by the 17th century).

Other important dialects of Coptic are Bohairic ("B", centered in the Western Delta of the Nile), Oxyrhynchite ("M", for the dialect of "Middle Egypt" or "Mesokemic"), Achmimic ("A") and Subachmimic or Lycopolitan ("A²" or "L", the main dialect of the Nag Hammadi Gnostic library), Fayyumic ("F"), with some others and many subvarieties.

From the genetic point of view of language classification, Egyptian-Coptic constitutes a special group of its own. However, the striking affinities it shows with both Semitic and African (e.g. Berber) languages have led to the widely accepted postulation of a Hamito-Semitic or Afro-Asiatic common family (although the same affinities can be explained by language blending, rather than by genealogical descent).
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th><strong>NOUN</strong></th>
<th><strong>VERB</strong></th>
<th><strong>ADVERB</strong></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>noun phrase: “the man”, “a man”, “Man”, “my brother” “the wise man”, “three men”, “Jesus the Saviour”, “a man and a woman”, “man and/or woman”, “to hear” “to make him hear” sections 1.1-2.3, 4, 9, 49-51</td>
<td>imperative: “Hear!” “Let him hear!” sections 8, 10</td>
<td>adverb phrase: “in the house”, “there”, “now”, “to me” “above”, “outside”, “why?”, “where?” section 5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vocative: “O man!” section 1.1 (a)</td>
<td>existential present/future: “There is a man coming”, “There is a man about to come”; “No man is coming”, “No man is about to come” sections 15.2, 16.2, 17.2</td>
<td>existential adverb predication: “There is a man here”, “No man is here” section 19.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>existence: “There is a man”, “There is no man”; “Here is a man” sections 12-14</td>
<td>Nominal Sentence: “He is a man”, “God is our help”, “You are our father”, “I am a sinner”, “His name is Paul”, “The root of all evil is pride”, “It is he” sections 3.1-3.4</td>
<td>Conjugation Forms: “I heard/did not hear”, “The man heard/did not hear”; “Since you/the man came”; “I am singing”, “The man is singing” “I am about to sing”; “She is good”, “He wishes”, “He said”; “Let him hear!” “... and you shall hear” sections 6-7, 10-11, 15.1, 16.1, 17.1, 18, 23-6</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**CIRCUMSTANTIAL CONVERSION** (sections 27-30): annexing a predicate to a pronoun, noun or verb: “the man/a man/he going”, “He went crying”, “Having come, he...”

**SECOND TENSE** CONVERSION (sections 34-38): “that...” as in “It is to you that I have come”: emphasizing (focussing) various elements of the clause

**RELATIVE CONVERSION** (sections 31-33): adjoining a clause to a definite noun: “the man who heard” “the man whose face I am watching”, “he about whom we say”

**PRETERITE CONVERSION** (sections 39-41): marking in narrative a change in “step” or tempo; marking anteriority, shift to the past, remote wish or condition
### THE ALPHABET

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Letter (of Greek Origin:)</th>
<th>Transliteration &amp; approx. phonic(*)</th>
<th>Numeric Value</th>
<th>Contemporary Name</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>a</td>
<td>a (as in French avoir)</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>Alpha</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>b</td>
<td>b</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>Beta</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>g</td>
<td>g</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>Gamma</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>d</td>
<td>d (as in men, French elle)</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>Dalda</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>e</td>
<td>e</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>Ei</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>z</td>
<td>z</td>
<td>6</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>h</td>
<td>c (as in main, German ch; not diphthong)</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>Zeta</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>n</td>
<td>o</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>Heta</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>s</td>
<td>i (as in sheet)</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>Theta</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>k</td>
<td>k</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>Iota</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>m</td>
<td>l</td>
<td>20</td>
<td>Kappa</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>n</td>
<td>m</td>
<td>30</td>
<td>Lauda, Lola</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>r</td>
<td>n</td>
<td>40</td>
<td>Mi</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>s</td>
<td>a</td>
<td>50</td>
<td>Ni</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>t</td>
<td>o (as in French note)</td>
<td>60</td>
<td>Xi</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>u</td>
<td>p</td>
<td>70</td>
<td>Ou</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>v</td>
<td>r</td>
<td>80</td>
<td>Pi</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>w</td>
<td>s</td>
<td>90</td>
<td>Ro</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>y</td>
<td>t</td>
<td>100</td>
<td>Simma</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>θ</td>
<td>w, u (as in foot)</td>
<td>200</td>
<td>Tau</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>φ</td>
<td>(comb.) p + h (haphazard)</td>
<td>300</td>
<td>He</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>χ</td>
<td>(comb.) k + h (backhold)</td>
<td>400</td>
<td>Phi</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ψ</td>
<td>(comb.) p + s (apage)</td>
<td>500</td>
<td>Khi</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ω</td>
<td>(as in door)</td>
<td>600</td>
<td>Psi</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ω</td>
<td>s (as in ship)</td>
<td>700</td>
<td>O</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ψ</td>
<td>s (as in ship)</td>
<td>800</td>
<td>Shai</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>q</td>
<td>r (as in jam)</td>
<td>90</td>
<td>Fai</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>h</td>
<td>h (as in house)</td>
<td></td>
<td>Hori</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>j</td>
<td>j (as in jam)</td>
<td></td>
<td>Djanja</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>c</td>
<td>c (as in chalk or bookyear)</td>
<td></td>
<td>Chima</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>t</td>
<td>(comb.) l + i (as in teen)</td>
<td></td>
<td>Ti</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

(*) Of practical value only (e.g. for reading out the texts); Standard Southern British equivalents.
The superlinear stroke is written above a consonant (esp. one of the sonorants ʌ ʍ n ɾ b; in the manuscripts, above a consonant or a group of consonants), to indicate its syllabic status (i.e. that it forms a syllable or a syllable peak by itself): ῥῆτ- ῥῆβ ἄγ̱ψ τῆμής τῆς “the testimony”. Note that printed editions sometimes do not attempt to reproduce the superlinear stroke in the manuscript. In the Chrestomathy, only the syllabic peak (center) is marked with the superlinear stroke.
GLOSSARY PRACTICE

Look up the following verbs, nouns and Proper Names (Egyptian-Coptic and Greek-Coptic intermixed) in the Glossary, and copy the words and meanings given into your notebook.

Note:
(1) under each letter of the alphabet, the native words come first (arranged by their consonantal “skeleton”); then the ones of Greek origin; then the Proper Names, both last arranged in the European fashion, by vowels and consonants.
(2) In Greek words, ignore an initial ζ before a vowel as regards its assignment to a letter: that is, look for ζε under ε, ζο under ο and so on.
(3) For some native words you will find more than one entry in the Glossary: copy all meanings given.

<p>| λας | χώ |
| λόβ | με |
| πωτ | ζήκε |
| μελος | οργή |
| καζ | δίνε |
| κε | ἀρχει |
| κω | ὑμό |
| απε | ὑμνω |
| γελις | καρτα |
| παγλος | σμογ |
| βαυορ | κρινή |
| ρωμε | κοογν |
| ασεβής | ογα |
| ρινε | θρόνος |
| σωτπ | ζοογτ |
| σε | ζωολος |
| ιτ | κογι |
| ωτε | κρονος |
| πλατε | ωΗρε |
| δας | ωεερε |
| † | ηογογτ |</p>
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Greek</th>
<th>English</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>χι</td>
<td>how</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ταλο</td>
<td>how</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ζηγεμων</td>
<td>ekklhcsia</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀμῖνε</td>
<td>oýoies</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>θαλασσα</td>
<td>theofílēstatos</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>πονε</td>
<td>pe</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>θλυσε</td>
<td>forεi</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>κοογ</td>
<td>λοδο</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>καιν</td>
<td>ρολδ</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>νογτε</td>
<td>eire</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ψενογτε</td>
<td>sinonvios</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ζωον</td>
<td>eime</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ρασε</td>
<td>ephhnh</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>παρθενος</td>
<td>e1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>τουσβε</td>
<td>eiswot</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>κωωμε</td>
<td>eiotε</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>βροομπε</td>
<td>nanoy-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>κηαιας</td>
<td>xoëis</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>φτορτη</td>
<td>2stnocs</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2αμην</td>
<td>cooy2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>μετανοει</td>
<td>grammateuos</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ηκας</td>
<td>2ampe</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>σφραγις</td>
<td>2eikwn</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
FIRST PART (Units I-VI, Sections 1-26):
THE FORMAL/FUNCTIONAL SYSTEM

(The noun phrase, adverb phrase; Nominal Sentence, verb system, adverb predication)
PART ONE:
UNIT (I): THE NOUN PHRASE (NOUN & VERB LEXEMES);
THE NOMINAL SENTENCE: THE PROPER NAME; THE ADVERB PHRASE
(sections 1-5)

1.1 The determinators: articles, demonstratives, possessive pronoun and
article
1.1.1 Inherent (inalienable) possession
1.2 The attributive group (the noun expanded by N-)
1.3 The possessive group (the noun expanded by N-, ÑTE-)
1.4 Apposition
1.5 Quantifiers; number names

2.1 Noun coordination ("... and ...")
2.2 Noun disjunction ("... or ...")
2.3 Noun reiteration

3. The Nominal Sentence: clauses predicating a pronoun or noun
syntagm
3.1 The interlocutive pattern: # interlocutive (1st-2nd persons: "I/we,
you") pronominal subject + noun-syntagm predicate #
3.1.1 The interlocutive subject topicalized
3.1.2 The interlocutive pattern, converted

3.2 The delocutive pattern: # nominal/pronominal predicate + delocutive
(3rd persons: "he, she, they") pronominal subject #
3.2.1 The delocutive subject expanded and specified by an appositive
noun
3.2.2 The delocutive subject topicalized
3.2.3 The delocutive pattern, converted

3.3 The copular pattern: # nominal/pronominal subject + copula +
nominal predicate #
3.3.3 The copular pattern, converted

3.4 Assorted patterns combined
(*).3.5 Some special Nominal Sentence patterns
(*).4 The Proper Name: selected special constructions

5. The adverb phrase
1.1 THE DETERMINATORS: articles, demonstrative pronouns, possessive articles and pronouns (Table A1-A4)

(a) The definite article: "the..." (π-, τ-, η-)
(b) The indefinite articles: "a...", "some..." (ογ-, ζεν-)
(c) The zero article
(d) ...ημ "every...", "any..."
(e) The 'near' demonstrative: "this" (παι, πει-)
(f) The 'remote', affective demonstrative: "that" (πη, πι-)
(g) The possessive article: "my, your, his/her..." (etc.) (πα-, πεκ-, πογ-, πεξ-...)
(h) The possessive pronoun: "mine, yours, his/hers..." (etc.), "(the) one pertaining to..." (πωι, πωκ, πω, πωκ, πωκ...; πα-, τα-, ηα-)

NB: (1) The definite articles have an alternant vocalized form: πε- (masc.), τε- (fem.), ψε- (plur.), before a double consonant (consonant cluster) or certain time-expressing nouns; the plural def. article η assimilates to a subsequent labial, taking the form η-.

(2) Many nouns have a regular plural form, e.g. χωμε "work" vs. χωμενε "works" or χοτο "horse" vs. χοτωμε "horses".

(3) A very small class of nouns has a regular feminine sex form, e.g. ισον "brother" vs. ισονε "sister" or ισομ "king" vs. ισομε "queen".

BIBLIOGRAPHY:

STERN parr: 226-241 (a-c), 272 (d), 242-249 (c-f), 250-253 (g-h), 199-207 (gender, number); STEINDORF parr 136-137 (a), 140-141 (b), 142-143 (c), 88-89 (c-f), 85-87 (g-h), 92-94 (gender, number); TILL parr. 87-91, 94-99 (a), 92-93, 100-102 (b), 103-108 (c), 231 (d), 201-202 (c-f), 203-206 (g-h); VERGOTE parr. 121-122, 124-125 (a), 123-125 (b), 126 (c), 127-128 (c-f), 136-137 (g-h); LAMBDIN parr. 1.3, 17.2 (a), 2.1-2.2 (b-c), 4.2, 5.2, 30.8 (c-f), 16.2 (d), 4.1, 22.2 (g-h), 1.1-1.2 (gender, number); POLOTSKY, Rev. Till p. 229 f. (f); *SHISHA-HALEVY, chapter 5 (gender, determination)

(α)


{NB: ιεραμοι plural of ιεροι; ημ- = ην- before the labials π ι}
(b) οὐγκε. οὐζων. ογαρξων. ογρήμαο. ογματοεἰ. ογλαστὶς. χεια. "ζεγγρον." ζεγξοογε. ογξητ ήογωτ. ζεγκατα-καφα. ογμημω.

{NB: ήογωτ "single")
[OBS. ζεγκατα-καφα: note the indefinite determination of a prepositional phrase: "some that are..."]

(c) (p-)παρενοε. (p-)ναντ. (p-)ειρηνη. (p-)αναυ. (τ-)σβω. (τ-)γιε. (ξι-)νηπε. (ογι-)ρωμε. (ογι-)δομ. (μηι-)αγαπη.

{NB: the auxiliary verbs π- "be, become", "make"; τ- "give", "cause"; ξι- "take". ογι-/μη- "there is/there is not" (sections 12-14)}

(d) ξιε νιμ. θυογ νιμ ἀρεθ νιμ ταειο νιμ. μητ-άτ-κωτι νιμ. ηνα-κα νιμ. γη-μα νιμ.

(e) πετοποε. νεμακε. γη-τειραμην ται. νειρωμε. ηπιε. ογτειμενε. ζεντειμενε

[OBS. ογτειμενε, ζεντειμενηe indefinite articles specified by τειμενε]

(f) πινηπεμε θηρι. ηπαραφυςις. πιακε. ηπασεβης. ηπακιος. πιηρη πηογωτ. ηπιν-ογωμ ηογωτ. ηπιαγ. ηει η-ηικοογε.

{NB: πι- ... ήογωτ "the very same...". ηει η- "like..." (lit. "in the manner of...")}

[OBS. θηρι - is a reinforcer or "augens", an element containing a pronoun, modifying a preceding noun or pronoun: "all...", "the whole of..."]

(g) πεντεαργοκε-νευτης. ατενθελπες θηρε. "ηπατοιγι. περή-

μηξα. ατενθυξη νιμ ηικητη. ηειμακε. ηειγιακιουμη.

{παειτε/ηειατης θηρε/ζεμπαρα-τεφυςις} ηηκαρασον.

[ΟBS. ζεμπαρα-τεφυςις plural indefinite article followed by a prepositional phrase]
1.1.1 INHERENT (intimate or "inalienable") POSSESSION expressed by a suffix pronoun following a special presuffixal (possessed) forms of a special class of nouns (esp. parts of the body).

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
Stern parr. 195-198; Stein dorff parr. 81-2; Till parr. 188; Vergote parr. 130(6), 131; Lambdin parr. 28.6, 29.4; Layton, "Compound Prepositions"

\[ \text{πω-κ. τοοτ-κ. 2θυ. 2θη. 2ντη. ωντη. τοοτ. πντογ. χωη.} \]

\{NB: 2θη precedes a zero (2nd person sgl. feminine) suffix pronoun; τοοτ: -τ "my" is zeroed after the final τ of the presuffixal form of the noun; πντ - see παν\}

Sources for 1.1 & 1.1.1:
III 19, 27, 45, 46, 47, 63, 64, 66, 70, 72, 73, 77, 90, 93, 96, 114, 133, 159, 166, 184, 191, 197, 219, 221; IV 4, 27, 32, 46, 61, 64, 67f., 82, 83, 94, 106, 119, 162, 180, 184, 187, 194; Ch 19, 20, 21, 27, 62, 63, 66, 67, 72, 78, 81, 83, 97; Or. 153, 155, 158, 159, 160, 161, 162, 163, 167; Wess. 9 118, 148, 171, 174; RE 10 159, 161, 162; RE 11 17; A I 246; A II 341, 442; Cat. 42, 43; Leyd. 345, 369; E 66; Gol.

1.2 THE ATTRIBUTIVE PHRASE: the noun expanded by \( \tilde{n} \) - zero-determinated noun. This construction expresses the characterization of one noun by the quality or kind of another; while \( \tilde{n} \) - is roughly equivalent to English "of" (or French "de"), the construction on the whole corresponds to "adjective + noun" in English or German.

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
Stern parr. 183-188; Stein dorff parr. 147-150; Till parr. 114-119, 122; Vergote parr. 189 (1-6); Lambdin parr. 15.1, 16.1, 23.2; *Shisha-Halevy, Chapter 4
1. οὐσίως εἰς εἰς εἰς οὐσίως εἰς οὐσίως (P 130.2 101 ro)
2. οὖπν όνως (IV 15) {NB: ὁνᾶ = ονᾶμα}
3. οὐνόμα ὁνομα ὁνομα (IV 206)
4. τέκνωμεν ὁπιτος ὁπιτος (III 172) {NB: ὁν- = ὁν- before π ὁ μ}
   [OBS. πιτος: the Greek masculine form of Greek-origin adjectives is used in Coptic for animates, both masculine and feminine]
5. ζαγε ἡμέρας (IV 89)
6. οὐνόμα ὁμοιος (Gol.)
7. θεοβιος θρούν θαηακιος (Gol.)
8. τέκνωμεν ὁκοφος (IV 59)
9. λαγγε ἴπος (III 63)
10. οὐσίωνος ἡσανθος: πρεθος ὁπεσθεν (III 221)
   [NB: στο- coordinate ("and") zero-determined nouns (section 2.1)]
11. χως-κοιν όιερας (IV 117)
12. κεκομης ἤσω ομ (III 45)
13. οὐσίων ὤμαξε (Ch. 97)
14. οὐσίως ἴαγγελος (Ch. 34)
15. ἀλλαταος ἐκρατειας ἢος (Ch. 70)
16. ἀλλαταος ἴαμαξ (III 70)
17. κεκομης ἴσωος (P 131.5 64 vo)
18. πκαζ ὀρεοτα-κάρπος (IV 186)
19. πειειςτά μπροφήτας (III 62)
20. ω πινοβ ομκα (Or. 154)
21. οὐοτομ ομ δοτ (E 70) {NB: ομ- ὁμ-: "What kind of...?"
22. τεκτονομεν ομποστος ομ ὁπροφήτας (III 106)
23. τοκος οι καλλης 21-2αρπεικος (Ch. 179)
   [NB: κα- coordinate ("and") zero-determined nouns (section 2.1)]
24. αοοτες ἀπονόμος οπος (Ch. 21)
   [OBS. note that in a certain affective tone it is the quality-expressing ("adjective") constituent of the attributive phrase that precedes]
25. οὐσίως ομ εἰς ἡμικαιος (III 64)
26. ζαγε ὁνοβ ἀνταμ σωσ ἡμικαιος (III 137) {NB: ἡγας = ἡγας}
27. τέκνωμεν ὁμανταος εἰς εἰς εἰς οὐσίως (III 171)
28. πουςκες ομ ὁτεαγε (Ch. 83)
29. πατρας οματοι (Ch. 56)
30. ποκαεφαρτος εἰς εἰς εἰς οὐσίως (III 26)
31. οἰωνομος ἐκκεστευς 21προεστος 21γραμματευς 21φαρακίας (Ch. 122)
32. οὐειςτ ἡμέρας ομ ἡκας ας Ἐν ἄγας ἴπεσθεν ομε (Ch. 111)
33. οὐρωμένη Ἰπάρανομος Ἰατρα ὑερτώρῳ Ἱακαβαρτος Ἱκροφ Ἱζσελλη (Ch. 191)
34. τεκκαίνεσα μῆν-περεφι-ογοειν πενειϊωτ ἦσιοτατος αὐῳ Ἱμαρτυρος παρχιεπικοπος κύριλλος (III 88f.)
35. ἧμιμινε ἦρωμε (IV 82)
36. ἔνδειςοβ ἦτείμινε (III 32)
37. οὖκαταρῳ-τῆ ἦρωμε (III 117)
   {NB: καταρο - the presuffixal or pronominal form of the preposition κατα-}
   [OBS. ω replaces ơ in open syllables: καταρῳ-τῆ]
38. πονεὶ ἦμπε-ενες (IV 4)
   {NB: ἦμπε-ενες, a prepositional phrase, is here used attributively like any noun}
39. ἦμαιωλον ἦμε ἦμε-ωμε (III 143)
   {NB: ἦμε- coordinates ("and") definite and indefinite nouns (section 2.1)}
   [OBS. The article ἦ in ἦμε resurnes ἦμαιωλον: "the [...] of -"]
40. καεκ ἦμίνε ἦμε (III 51)
   {NB: ἦμε ἦμε a reiterated noun (2.3), expressively used for "every"

1.3 THE POSSESSIVE PHRASE: the noun expanded by
(a) ἦ- + definite/indefinite noun
(b) ἦτε- + definite/indefinite noun, ἦτα- + suffix pronoun

Constructions (a) and (b) are selected according to the determination and expansion of the first noun (nucleus). While both correspond to the English genitive and "of", expressing possession and appurtenance, ἦτε- seems to express appurtenance rather than possession where both occur after similarly determinated nouns.

(a) [π-/ογ-] ἦ- [π-/ογ-]
(b) [ογ-/θ-] ἦτε- [π-/ογ-]
   [π- ...] ἦτε- [π-/ογ-]

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
STERN parr. 292-297; STEINDORFF parr. 148, 156; TILL parr. 111-113, 122, 207;
VERGOTE parr. 190 (1-2); LAMBIDIN parr. 2.3, 15.1, 22.1
THE FORMAL-FUNCTIONAL SYSTEM

(a)

\( [\pi \cdot \tilde{\eta} / \omicron \cdot \gamma \cdot \varepsilon \eta] + \tilde{n} + [\pi \cdot \tilde{\eta} / \omicron \cdot \gamma \cdot \varepsilon \eta] \)

1. πνήμα ἤπεξε (Ch. 95)
   \( \text{(NB: } \text{πνήμα } = \text{πεξρικτός: “sacred names” are orthographically abbreviated and marked with a longer superlinear stroke)} \)

2. πλογος ἤπνογτε (RE 10 160)

3. πεζλοθ ἤγεσυμης ωημ (A I 246)

4. ἤγεσα ἤντεγας (P 130.2 4 p. 84)

5. πηςπογ ἤτεγρω (IV 53)

6. πογωψ ἤπεντη (III 140)

7. τεσομ ἤπεκσρογ (E 57)

8. ζεγψγψ ϊστερη-πογτε (A II 486)

9. τεσης ἤπαλην πηξοει (III 151)

10. πεζψγε ἤπκκα (Leyd. 296)
   \( \text{(NB: } πεζψγε \text{ plural of } πξωβ \})

11. νηψξ ἤπογραμμε νηκαβ (IV 127)

12. ἤγηςρ πνηογ ἤπνογτε (Ch. 67)
   \( \text{[OBS. Note that the reinforcer } \tau ηρ - \text{ follows its noun immediately, preceding any other expansion]} \)

13. τεμηγε ἤαμητε (III 184)
   \( \text{[OBS. } \alphaμητε, \text{ being a Proper Name, is not determined]} \)

14. πεζίπνογε ἤτεσσω ἤπεγραφ (III 125)
   \( \text{(NB: } πεζίπνογε \text{ plural of } πιης \})

(b)

\( [\omicron \cdot \gamma \cdot \varepsilon \eta / \phi / \pi \cdot \tilde{\eta} \cdot \tilde{n} + ] + \tilde{\eta}τε - + [\pi \cdot \tilde{\eta} / (\omicron \cdot \gamma \cdot \varepsilon \eta -)] + \tilde{\eta}τα - \)

1. ἤγημογ ἤτεπαος (E 88)

2. ἤγηςγεμων ἤτεπεγνως (III 143)

3. πηςπογυ ἤτεπκα (P 131.6 44 115)

4. πηςκαργχων ἤτεπκοας (III 27)
   \( \text{(NB: } \kappa - \text{ “other” follows the determinators but precedes the lexeme (section 1.5)} \)

5. πξως- ϊσρ- πξωβ ἤπνογτε (IV 30)

6. πηςνικοδομη ἤτεπεσυμης ωημ (A II 433)

7. ϊσρε ἤτεπογοειν. ωηρε ἤτεπκα (III 75)

8. (we do not hear) ε-προογ ἤτα (III 203)
   \( \text{(NB: } \varepsilon - \text{ preposition governed by } ςμϊν \text{ “hear”)} \)

9. ωρεβερε ωημ ἤτα (Cat. 42)

10. ἤγαλα ἤτεογγαλα ἤτα (III 36)

11. πρε νημ πιςω νιμ ἤτεπνογ (IV 195)
12. ἡμέρας οἱ Ντάγ (III 173)
13. ἡμέρας αἱ εἰκόνες Ντένενχος (IV 126)
   {NB: εἰκόνες relative present, “which (are) holy” (section
   16.1.1)}
14. γιγκάτακαρθ Ντάγ (III 136)

1.4 APPOSITION: one noun (or determinated element) specifying
another by following it, with no other means of connecting the two. A
common noun describing a Proper Name, a Proper Name identifying and
naming a common noun; a common noun or Proper Name explicating a
personal pronoun; a demonstrative pronoun repeated; appositive
attributes: ω̄μ, κογι “little”, “small”. Fixed Greek terminological
expressions.

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
Stern par. 483; Steindorff par. 144; Till parr. 110; Vergote par. 188

1. ἀβελ παῖκαιος. ζαχαριας ἡμέρες Νταραχιας (III 103)
2. ἀλεξάναρος πνημεμων (III 32)
3. πνοϊκάς Ναρεβεκκά τημάς Νιάκας (IV 27)
4. μανικς πανηγυτε abilitéκας (A I 194)
5. πενχοες υγείς πενειοττάς ιγυς τενμάς μας (IV 129)
   {NB: υγείς = μηγοῦς}
6. πενειράτ ἐνίωτο Νεοφιλακτάς ἀπο της ωης (III 14)
7. πρωμε Νάρας Αβαναίος καπαλεπησεκος (III 108)
8. πεκκρο πεκτα (Ch. 122)
   {NB: πεκτα = πεκρίσκος}
9. τειρομπή τα (III 219)
   [OBS. an appositive demonstrative, meaning “this very ...”]
10. πενογ ν-εβολ αιγγ-κρωμε (III 35)
    {OBS. πενογ the def. article determining an adverb phrase: “the
   one (that is) from ...”}
11. ο ρωμες ιγυς Ντός ο ρομες τερς (Or. 153)
   {NB: ρωμες: 2nd person sgl. fem. form of the reinforcer ρόμω-}
12. ζημπενας Ναι (E 82)
13. πετνογογως Νπεσναγ (Or. 160)
   {NB: Νπεσναγ: Ν- introduces a number name apposition}
14. φυπαραπτωμα κογι (Leyd. 345)
15. τημηςικε νημ (Ch. 14)
16. πεκκραλ νης (Z 246 75)
17. ἅκογι ὑμιν ἄγοου (of life; Ryl. 71 91) [OBS. note that ὑμιν has precedence over an ἄ- introduced attributive (or possessive) expansion]
18. ἀνοκ πιειν (III 137)
19. ἀνον ἰμονακος (Ch. 56)
20. τκασιλικ ἐκκλησία (E 84)
   (NB: this is a fixed combination, imported “ready-made” from the Greek and following the rules of Greek syntax; so too in texts 21-2)
21. τεπλατονικ ἀιδακαλία (A I 15)
22. τπαλαία μι-τκαινιν ἀινακή (A II 244)
23. ἀνον ἴμπεικανος (Ch. 160)
24. ἄτωτι ὢ ἡκαπετικος (III 47)
25. ἄτωτι ἀπ ἅκακε ἄτιε (III 86)
26. ὢ πωυνε ἅκακε πεβολ γκακακε πακα (E 94)
27. πεκε ἣτε πενκοκείς ἄγω πενκαρθπ πνουτε ἄγω πωμε ἄπνουτε (Ch. 83)

1.5 QUANTIFICATION

{kε-, γεκε- “another ...”, “other ...” (plural)
   -66-
   [π- πει-, πει-]κε- “the/this/his other ...”, “also the/this/his ...”

Cardinal numbers:  ὧγ-, ὧγ- ... ἱογώτ “one ...”
   ... χιαγ/χιτε “two ...” (masc./fem.)
   number + ἄ- + zero noun from 3 onward.
   ... τημ “any ...”, “every ...”

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
Stern parr. 270-271, 277-283, 486; Steindorff parr. 158, 166-168; Till parr.
162-164, 225, 227-230; Vergote parr. 147-152, Lambdin parr. 4.3, 15.3, 16.5

1. καπονήρον (RE II 18)
2. γεκερπρογ (III 68)
3. γεκκεμα (RE II 164)
4. ἰκεκαμακ (RE II 15)
5. (She misleads not only the fools,) ἄλλα ἰκεκαβεγ on (Or. 153)
6. (She became a cause of transgression) ἅκ αε ἦκαλα- ἄλλα ἰπεκεζαί on (Or. 166)
   {NB: ἄκ = pronominal form of the “dative” preposition ἄ-; ἦκαλα = reinforcer or augens)
[OBS. an negates the adverb nac magaæc]

7. tæcoy Ṉoυοeik Ḍoγw (Or. 162)
8. natkêpalia (i.e. the Testament; Ch. 74)
9. ñëmìtnan-βeμeλnic Ṉnay Ṉna-μeñeρu (III 136)
   {NB: ñëmìtnan “we do not have” (section 13.2)}
10. pbaal cnaä Ḍmëptu-Kôeït (III 118)
11. oγbałe ḃìteψoγeρhte ṝuÄ (A II 245)
12. ñeγenoc cnaä (III 219)
13. ḍoγ Ḋgòwòloc (Or. 162)
14. ṇe Ṉaìxìmìλɔtɔc (III 71)
15. ñoṁnìt nèvɔt (III 69)
16. ɔmëwɔmtë ñρɔmpe. ñe ñρɔmpe (III 219)
17. ñmont ñeòeik ñeïwt (III 73)
18. tæioy mï-ɔawq ñwë mï-ɔoò ñtɔba ñzomìt (III 71)
19. ñæò ɔgw ìnekxì ɔmìpeκκeεïwɔt lìmëx (Ch. 75)
20. ɔawq ñcæèin (III 69)
21. ñkeòya (Ch. 166)
22. ñeikɔoye (Ch. 83)
23. kezub ñògwɔt (Ch. 160)
24. oγsht ñògwɔt. oγsɔwa ñògwɔt. ñgïna ñògwɔt. oγsbw ñògwɔt. oγɔńtìc ñògwɔt. ñγɔнтe ñògwɔt (Ch. 153)
25. ñpɔγæλìoc ñkòmec ñtìrɔw ɔgw neçkeçën (Ch. 108)
26. rùme nìm (Ch. 151)
27. oγ mònon ɔì-neçekkànïicì ɔgw neçıtòpoc ñìna nìm... ìlìlì ɔìnènêkêicì on ìnìnì ɔmìneçìmì ɔgw nènëîtìê ñììnëncìï (Ch. 159)
   {NB: oγ mònon (Greek) “not only”}
28. (You love) ñzìp nìm ñmì (Ch. 85)
   {NB: ñ- preposition marking the direct object}
29. (Not just) rùme oγte aρxãgëloc ɔgw ɔbûm nìm (Ch. 136)
30. ñgìmì nìm (Ch. 86)
31. (Who does not differ from His Father) ñìbûm nìm ñìsììøòuy nìm ɔì-ìtaìì nìm ɔìnìntìqìntìì nìm ɔìnìntìqììtìì nìm ɔìnìntìxììçìoc nìm (Ch. 118)

2.1 COORDINATION (“... and ...”)

(a) definite/indefinite noun + ɔgw (“also”) + definite/indefinite noun
(b) definite/indefinite noun + mï- (“with”) + definite/indefinite noun
(c) indefinite/zero det. noun + ɔì- (“on”) + zero-determined noun
(d) noun + noun (juxtaposition: asyndetic coordination, esp. in lists).
BIBLIOGRAPHY:
Stern parr. 552, 559, 591-592; Steindorff parr. 179, 181, 413; Till parr. 374-377; Vergote par. 178; Lambdin par. 30.11(a)

(a)
1. ἔσχη αὐγα λαγά ἐσχύρε ὑπὸν (Wess. 9 149a-b)
2. ὄρνηρ ἑγά πάντε σῖντε (III 97)
3. ἀλέξανδρος ἔπρεπε ἑγά ὁ ἐπικρατεῖ (III 32)
4. ἔσχη ἄστεγαὶ ἐβάπτε (RE II 17)
5. τῶν καὶ ἑγά ἔργον καὶ (IV 21)
6. πρῶμε ἄκαθαρτος ἑβάπτε ἔνοικος (Or. 167)
7. ὀγείωτ ἑβάπτε ὑμᾶς (Or. 158)
8. ἦσε ἴλογε ἴλογε ἵλογε (Or. 167)
   (NB: ἦσε ἴ- "in the manner of", "like...", "as...")
9. ὁ πρῶμε ἑβάπτε ἵλογε ἵλογε (Or. 154)
   [OBS. The personal pronoun is coordinated by ἑβάπτε, i.e. in construction (a)]

(b)
1. πνεύματο ἔπετε (III 113)
2. πνεύματος ἔπετε (IV 32)
3. ὄργανον ἔπετε (III 113)
4. πνεύματος ἔπετε (IV 32)
5. ἔπετε ἔσχη αὐγα ἔσχη ἔσχη ἔσχη (III 70)
6. ὀγείωτ ἔσχη αὐγα ἔσχη (Ch. 47)
7. τῶν καὶ ἔσχη (IV 176)
   (NB: ἔσχη = t. 26v)
8. ἔσχη (IV 27)
9. ἄλλα ἐβάπτε (IV 3)
10. ἄλλα ἄλλα ἔσχη (IV 62)
11. ἄλλα ἔσχη (IV 62)
   (NB: ἔσχη: auxiliary verbs, here indefinite infinitives ("cases of..."))
12. ἄλλα ἔσχη (P 130.2 5 85)
13. ἄλλα ἔσχη (IV 115)

(c)
1. σώμα λόγος (Cat. 43)
2. ἄλλα (IV 3)
3. μητάξαες γιαμάζων γιανοδες (III 192)
4. μελος άνκραφ ζιθντ γιακολες γιακες γιατισ γιασώς
   μονός γιακος γιαείς μήνκεαναγκή (RE 11 16)
   {NB: ζιθντ = γιθντ}
   [OBS. Note the alternation 2ι-/μη- regulated by the determination]
5. ηρωμε άποκραψφχη άσωρε γιασερε γιακον γιακωε (IV 21)
6. σαγογ νιφ γισωντ νιμ (P. 130.2 5 85)
7. (you shall not lack) ηοεικ γιαεοεις γιαλαγ γιθκα επιπρι
   ντε-πκας (III 205)
8. (Would that I could find) ηινιογτε νιγστ γιανοβ γιασομτ
   γισμας (III 111)
   {NB: ηι-(νινογτε) preposition marking the direct object}
9. γενος νιμ ιγελλην-πιςαρτεκοσ (Ch. 179)
10. μισε νιμ γιπτων νιμ μιγσωβ νιμ εφγοου μισπηγιαν νιμ
    ικαρκικον (IV 118)
    {NB: εφγοου "that is evil", circumstantial present (sections 16.1.1,
     27.1) describing γισωβ νιμ}
    [OBS. ικαρκικον the Greek neuter form of Greek-origin adjectives
     is used in Coptic for inanimates]
11. γεσκάρ ιεις γιστο (P 130.2 86ο)
    γισωνε γιομε (A 1 381)
    [OBS. γε- brackets [ωνε γισωμε] "(people) characterized
     by..."
12. ογιρ ισις γιζρους ιτιντζρκε γιαοοου ιηι-αίων ιαπας
    ιμπντριμο (III 205)

(d)

1. γεσμήτριμςμς γενεογουν γεσκοκκαε γεσκοπτος ί... ί
    γεσμήτριμςμς γενεογουν ιμοειμε (III 206)
2. γεσμήποφηθες γεσγεγκελιον γεσκοπτολος γεσμήφ
    ενασσου γεσκεκαεγκε ιησετογιας γεσωντε γιασενκ-
    εσοογε ενασσου (III 207)
    {NB: ενασσου "that are numerous", circumstantial Adjective
     Verb (section 22.5). ιησετογιας "they that are holy", plural definite
     relative present (16.1.1.31.1) }
3. γεσκαφραμος γενεονε γεσματοι γεσπριμο ο γεσμπυ-
    μος ... γεσκατανες γεσκαλουνιον γεσκα ικαθαρτο
    γεσωντε ιμοπογε γεσμπυμομος ιμοει νιμ (III 205)
2.2 DISJUNCTION ("[either] ...or...", "[neither] ...nor...", "whether...
or..."): ἕ (...
), οɣάε (...
οɣάε), οɣτε (...
οɣτε), εἴτε...
εἴτε

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
Stern par. 593, 595; Till par. 377; Vergote par. 178.

1. πεςκόν ἡ πέςκῳρ (III 52)
2. οὔαγκελος Ὁ οὔπνα ητεπPathVariable (III 214)
3. (Do not call this book) ονομά ή υάε ήσβώ ζιεντόλη (III 192)
4. κάι η ηκοογε (IV 2)
5. πεγγρηγ η ηεγζοθιή ο ογηναλυ (IV 113)
6. εἴτε ζοοογτ εἴτε ζοίμε (IV 154, and often)
7. (What are we all) εἴτε ἐρο εἴτε αρχων εἴτε ρῆμα εἴτε ζηκε εἴτε ούνηε εἴτε ογον ηηος ζιογογον (Leyd. 362)
8. (They do not perform) ηηα-τεξριη ηηπσωμα ογαε ηα-τεγγαη (III 115)
   {NB: η- direct object marker}
9. (Let us not cut off) ηζηεμοδ ηζογοε ογτε ηοδ ηκλατος (IV 73)
   {NB: κλατος = κλαδος}
10. μη-κακία ογτε κωζ ογτε ηοστε ογτε ηη ηδονς ηολως 2η-παζη (III 138)
    {NB: μη- negates existence (or affirms non-existence): "there is not" (section 12.2); 2η- assimilated form of the preposition 2η-}
11. ηρη ηα ογαε αθ ογαε ηκοογε ετηαωηγογ (IV 94)
    {NB: ετηαωηγογ "that are numerous", relative adjective verb (section 22.5)}
    {OBS. αθ, ογαε negative the nouns ηρη, αθ, ηκοογε}
12. τεςγγαη ηα ηα γα γαπ ηζοηα η προημε ηθην (III 214)
13. ογιηετδαηε η ηεηαγαη ετηετδαηε (III 194)

2.3 NOUN REITERATION

(a) Of definite nouns: "every...", "any...
(b) Of indefinite/zero det. nouns: "... by ..." (adverbial)
(c) Of zero-determinated nouns (the whole following in an attributive phrase): "of every...", "of all sorts of..."

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
Stern par. 273; Steindorff par. 145; Till par. 109; Shisha-Halevy par 1.3.3
FIRST PART

(a)

1. πογα πογα κατα-τεμινε (III 110)
2. (See each other) μη-μη μη-μη κατα-τεμινε (A II 278)
3. (Trample on) θαιρεσις θαιρεσις (A I 395)
4. (Things we have) τημπκαρος πκαρος τημπκαρος (IV 71)

(b)

1. κατα-τεμινε μη ομωμ ομωμ (A I 150)
2. (They speak) ογα ογα (A I 12)
3. (The Lord sends them off) ομαγ ομαγ (A I 12)
4. (You tear them apart) ποσε ποσε μλεκεμ μλεκεμ (A I 108)
5. (The shame diminished) ωνω ωνω (A I 101)

(c)

1. Φαωμ ηγεωμ ημινε μεινε ζι-αγαν αγαν (A II 116)

3. THE NOMINAL SENTENCE: CLAUSES PREDICATING A PRONOUN OR NOUN SYNTAGM

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
Stern parr. 300-302, 304-305, 307; Steindorf parr. 298-312; Till parr. 242-246; Vergote parr. 195-198; Lambdin parr. 6.1, 6.2, 15.2, 22.2; *Polotsky Nominalsatz; Shisha-Halevy, "Patterns"; "Discovery Procedure"

3.1 THE INTERLOCUTIVE (1st/2nd person) PATTERN: # interlocutive (1st-2nd person: "I/we, you") pronominal theme (subject) + noun-syntagm rheme (predicate) #: "I am/you are ...". See TABLE B1. Negatived: # (檠-) theme + rheme an #

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
*Polotsky, Nominalsatz parr. 20-30; Shisha-Halevy, "Patterns"

1. ανι-ογωνιδος ημωμ (III 123)
2. ανιμι ανικ (III 15)
   [OBS. ανικ: augens, marking the question as rhetorical. On the augens as a grammatical category, see Shisha-Halevy chapter 6]
3. ανι-ογκαταρωτι ανημωμ ημιν αλλα ανι-ογκαταρωτι ημιν αλλα (III 117)
THE FORMAL-FUNCTIONAL SYSTEM

{NB: ὅγκαταρψτὰ indef. article with the preposition κατα-: “one according to...”}

4. Ἱττι-ογενηθ (Ch. 42)
5. Ἱττιογουμετε ῦιογαροογε (Ch. 36)
6. Ἱττι-ογογ (III 38)
   {NB: ὅγογ indef. article + interrogative pronoun}
7. εὐχε-ἡττιογυῖνα ῦ ογαρελος (, then I too am a servant of God) (III 38)
8. Ἱττι-ογίαλα λν (III 22)
9. ἀν-γενκαβε (P 130.4 104 123)
10. ἀνον-γεντῆ ἀγω ἀνον-γεντατήπως (A I 134)
    {NB: ἀνον- fuller variant of ἀν-, 1st plural subject}
11. ἀνονζενογεὶ ἰε ἱων εἰτε ἰπρο εἰτε ἱργον εἰτε ἰμηαο εἰτε ἱκε (Leyd. 362)
12. ἀνονζηνδολ ἀνονζενρωμε ἀν (A II 174)
13. εὐχε-ἀνον-ἡνωρε ἰε ἱππρο μεκε εἰε ἀνονζενρό (A I 164)
14. ἱττετ-νιττν αν (Wess. 9 118a)
    {NB: πωττ possessive pronoun, “yours (pl.)”}
15. ἱττετ-νιττν-ἡνωρε-ϛ-γομ ἰττατατατ ἱττετ-νιττν-νογοει ἱττετι мая (Thompson K 3 vo)
    {NB: ἱττετ-: fuller variant of ἱττετ-; ἱ- auxiliary “do, make”,
     deriving verbs from nouns; ἵττετι мая determined relative present
     predicating an adverb (section 19.1.1): “he who (is) there” = “that
     one (yonder)”}

3.1.1 THE INTERLOCUTIVE (1st/2nd person) THEME (SUBJECT)
TOPOICALIZED, i.e. represented in front of the clause as well as in the
first position of the pattern: “As for me/you, I am/you are...”: # noun/
pronoun + [1st/2nd pron. theme + noun-syntagm rheme] #. See -
table B1

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
* POLOTSKY, Nominalsatz, parr. 35-38

1. ἀνοκ (KERN τ ἀντεγρεῖςα (III 38)
   {NB: ἱωττ 1st person sgl. of the reinforcer ἱωττ =: “for my
   part”, “I too”}
2. ἀνοκ ἰε πταλαίπωρος ἀντεγρεῖςε ἱίνα-πκας ἀντεγ-
   ρογε-ἡκε ἱίνα-τпе (Ch. 99)
3. ἢτο ἡσωτε ἡτεογήσαγ ἃν (III 22)
   {NB: ἡσωτε 2nd person sgl. feminine of ἡσω-}
4. πογα πογα ἀνον- ἤκελος ἤκεν-ἐρημ (Leyd. 348, cf. Eph. 4:25)
5. ἀνον γαρ ἀνονεγέταλασινπρος ἱπεντο ἐβόλ ηνποειις
   (P 131.7 46 254)

3.1.2 THE INTERLOCUTIVE (1st/2nd person) PATTERN
   CONVERTED (see tables B 1, G)

(a) Circumstantial (ε- + interlocutive pattern): “although...” (28-30)
(d) Preterite (νε- + interlocutive pattern): in remote wish (“O that I
   were...”) (41)

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
STEINDORFF parr. 374, 377, 479f.; VERGOTE p. 162 parr. 162, 166(2), 204;
LAMBIDIN parr. 25.1 (d); *POLOTSKY, Nom. Transposition parr. 6, 22-33.

(a) Circumstantial:
1. (You pretend to be righteous) ἐντετην-ἐγνώσατε (III 135)
2. (Is it not amazing that I have told you all that is on my mind) εανν-
   ὀγεβίνν ἐκελε (Ch. 108)

(d) Preterite:
1. ἡσον ἀνον-ογα ἡμοῦ (IV 91)

3.2 THE DELOCUTIVE (3rd person) PATTERN: # nominal/pronomin
   al rhyme (predicate) + delocutive (“he, she, they”) pronominal
   theme (subject): πε/τε/νε #. See table B2a

Negativied: # (ν- ) rhyme + ἂν + theme #

NB: The pronominal theme (πε, τε, νε) refers either to a preceding
nominal (“he/she/it/they are”) or to the determinator of its own rhyme,
when it is used impersonally (“it is”); exx. for the latter case are texts 6,
7, 10, 13-18.

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
*POLOTSKY, Nominal satz parr. 20-30, 34
1. πνούτε πε· πνούτε ἂν πε (Ch. 65f.)
2. ὄντοντρόν πε (Ch. 95)
3. ὁγαρκών πε· ὁγοφόρος πε (Wess. 9 139a)
4. (Of the snake:) οὐ 2ωνθε πε 2ως εὐχε·ογκαπ ἤνογε πε (Ch. 30)
   {NB: 2ωνθε particle: "anyway"; 2ως εὐχε- "as if"}
5. ἦπιρονογος ἂν πε (Ch. 95)
6. (When you console a man on someone who was killed, do not tell him) ἔε·περαζε πε ἦπεραζε ἂς ἂς πε (III 43)
7. τσέκας πε (A II 342)
8. τσέκας ὁντόν πε (III 114)
9. (Of the Bride in Song of Songs:) ογεία γαρ τε ογνοβ ἤξαθε γα ύσ εοιραφεονος τε αγω ὁγήλεετε τε ὁγκάτος τε ἂγω ὁγναν α τε ... ὁγλας τε ἂγω ὁγπροφόητης τε ... ὁγκεκε τε ἂγω ὁγος τε ὁγωστε ψηθ τε ἂγω ὁγ -προεβτης τε ὁγωεερε τε ἂγω ὁγμααγ τε ὁγηι τε ἂγω ὁγπολος ἂε ὁν τε (III 57-8)
   [OBS. The indefinite nouns predicated of the feminine τε "she is" are of feminine or masculine gender: the real predicate is the indefinite article ογ- "a (fem.)"]
10. πεναλογ ψηθ πε ἆντκοογ (P 130.1 133 329)
    [OBS. Note the position of the theme πε, prosodically weaker than other constituents of the clause ("enclitic")]
11. τσεοιανολον πε εμεγψακε (IV 68)
    {NB: εμεγψακε circumstantial conversion of the negative aorist in adnominal role (sections 6.2.1, 27.1) describing τσεοιανολον "that are not able to talk"}
    [OBS. Note the position of the theme πε]
12. (Of gold:) ογρασογ πακ πε εκκοκτα ἂγω πεκμοκκεκ πε ἕπρν (A II 531)
    {NB: εκκοκτα, ἕπρν circumstantial present forms (sections 15.1.1, 16.1.1, 28.1) "when you are asleep ... when you are awake"; πακ the preposition ἂ- /hα- before the 2nd sgl. masc. suffix}
13. (When a thief is hated,) ἄν·ογνοίζε ἂς τε ογκε η·ογνοβε ἂς τε ἂλλα ογαραθον ἄνγογο πε (A I 95)
14. πασεις ἂς πε (IV 154)
15. τκιστεια τε (IV 154)
16. πψωμ πε· τεπρω τε (IV 110f.)
17. τσγωμ τε (IV 83)
18. ἔναν πώκ ἐν ἑπίῳ ἐπὶ ἡμείς μὴν ἄνευ αὐτοῦ λέγουστε εἰ (Ch. 35)
{NB: πώκ, πά- possessive pronouns (section 1.1 h)}
19. ὁ γύος ἐν ὑμῖν ὡς ὑμεῖς ἐν ἑπίῳ λέγετε εἰ (III 192)

3.2.1 THE DELOCUTIVE (third person) SUBJECT EXPANDED
and SPECIFIED BY AN APPOSITIVE NOUN: # nominal/pronominal
rHEME (predicate) + πε/τε/νε + noun (specifying or explicating
πε/τε/νε) # (Table B2b)

Negatived: # (ὢ-) nominal/pronominal rHEME + ἀν + πε/τε/νε +
noun #

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
* Polotsky, Nominalsatz pass. 38-45

1. ἕτοχ πε πνούστε (Ch. 84)
2. ἕτοχ πε τάι (Ch. 121)
3. ογ τε τεντελίς (Ch. 82)
4. ογνορ πε πενογαυ (Wess. 9 117b)
5. τοῦτο ἢπ τε-εὐφροσυνὴ τῆς ὑμείς ἡ μεσίτη (III 117)
6. παί πε πνούστε ἤμε (Ch. 83)
7. πώκ πε πνούσ πώκ πε πγατ τουκ τε τοικομενν (III 90)
8. νουχ πε προβήτ μὴν ποιεῖ ἡμιζάλω γνίμ (III 73)
9. ογκακρισος πε ογκακρισος ἢπεξε γνομε (P 130.2 110 γο)
10. ἀρα γενήθηκα εἴη εἰ ἕνοε (Wess. 9 94α)
11. ογμοί ἐν τοῖο οὐανά γίνειον εἰσομεν εἰσομεν (III 76)
12. γενάταν ἕνοε ἔγραι εἰ ἑχολ φεργενοαί ἂν ἕν (A II 32)
{NB: εγραὶ εἴσων two prepositional phrases: see ε-, γραὶ and
εἴσω-}
13. ἄλπε πε πνοβ πνοοείς ἀναθά νε ἁτομεν ἀναθά πε (III 16)
{NB: ξιν- = ξιν- “or”}
14. ην ογταμίο πε πνομε ἁπονε (Orig. 310)
{NB: η ἢ introduces a rhetorical question}
15. ογλας εἴσαρη νηογον νε ἡπλα ἠκατεβάς (III 113)
{NB: εἴσαρης circumstantial present (sections 16.1.1, 27.1) de-
scribing ογλας "that is impure"
16. πως ἀγα αώ ἐν πελα (Or. 168) (said of the beautiful woman)
17. ἄλπε βε πε πεβκω ἅρα-ποβαε μὴνεσω ἰνεγράφη (III 52)
18. (He who denies, saying) ἵκ ἄν πε πεهة (III 114)
19. ταί τε θε ἡπατανας (E 78)
   [OBS. ταί τε θε “thus”, “in this manner” (lit. “this is the manner”); compare ἡθε ἄν- or καταθε ἄν- “as”, “like” (lit. “in the manner”, “according to the manner”) and ἱτεηε ἄν “in this manner”, “thus”. “The manner” (θε i.e. τ-ε) is followed by ἄν- for a compared noun or by a relative for a compared verbal action, event or state. The possessive article is used for a compared person: ἱτεηε “like us”, lit. “in our manner"]
20. ἄρ πε πεήε ηπηθη η ογ τε τητητηε (IV 118)
21. ηπω άν πε πεηεάκε ογοε ηπαλλάγ ηηγηηηγη άν πε 
   πεηεάκε άλλα πατοικογημη ηηρη οε (A I 62)
22. ουνοβ πε πρωμε (Young 14)

3.2.2 THE DELOCUTIVE (3rd person) THEME (SUBJECT) TOPICALIZED, i.e. represented in front of the clause as well as in the second position of the pattern: “As for the man, he is . . .”: # noun/pronoun + 
   [nominal/pronominal theme (predicate) + πε/τε/νε] #
   Negatived: # noun/pronoun + (ἂν-) + theme + ἄν + πε/τε/νε #
   (Table B2c)

Bibliography:
* Polotsky, Nominalsatz part. 35-8

1. ἵκορ γρ ἀγ γεεκοτ ογα νε (RE 11 17)
2. πεηεάκε ηηκεκεκειολ ηηρογ γεημε νε νογι άε γεηνβα 
   νε (III 141)
3. άγαθον ηημ νογι νε (III 72)
4. πεηοοογ πα-ηηεηιοι άν πε άλλα πα-πηςο νε (III 47)
5. (Can you say;) άε-πεηοοογ ογεοολ ηηπογωηνγ νε (P 130.5 
   17 107)
   {NB: ογεοολ ηηπογωηνγ the indefinite article with an adverbial 
   phrase, ογοολ άη-, consisting of ογοολ “out” further qualified and 
   precised by the preposition άη-}
6. πεηηθε ει-ογεοολ άν πε ηηπητφη ηηπεηκ (E 79)
7. άε άδονη εημ γεημοβε νε ἄγ χοβε εημ γεηξη άδονη νε 
   (E 92)
8. άε-νη γαρ παρωμε άν πε άλλα παηνογυ νε (P 130.4 156 
   364)
3.2.3 THE DELOCUTIVE (3rd person) PATTERN CONVERTED
(see Tables B2, G)

(a) Circumstantial (ε- + delocutive pattern): “although”, also adnominal
(27-30)
(b) Relative (ετε- + delocutive pattern): “who...” (31-33)
(d) Preterite (νε- + delocutive pattern): past tense, anteriority, hypothetical result (39-41)

(a) Circumstantial:
1. ὡγνοβε ενπωι πε (A I 84)
2. τεςκωμε ετξω ἠμοι κε-ἀνι-οὐναρβενος εογει αν τε (A II 62)
   [NB: ετξω relative present predicating κεω “say” (section 15.1.1) with ἠμοι-κ “it” the neuter feminine (direct-object-marking preposition + κ) as an empty direct object: “he says (κ)”; [OBS. εογει “one (fem.)” represents the indefinite article ογ- (“a (fem.)” of the predicate in the first (affirmative) Nominal Sentence]
3. (These you say are pure) εζενατώγει νε (Ε 67)
4. (They think of themselves κε-ζενατάθον νε εζεναπώπον νε (A I 209)
5. (How can anything have existed before Him) εντογ πε ταπε ἰπκεωντ τηρ (Wess. 9 147c)
6. ρωμε εζενπραζικ κευμ νε νεγξβηγε (IV 25)
   [NB: adnominal circumstantial, expanding (qualifying) ρωμε]
7. ὡγννουε ε-μνωκ αν πε (Or. 155)

(b) Relative:
1. νασεβνε ναμε ετεγνεβοτε ἰπξοεικ νε νεγξιοογε (IV 10)
2. πνηνυσε ετε-μπωκ αν πε (P 130.2 95 149)
3. ιπνιν ετεκωτε αν τε (Or. 155)
4. Nete-noyqe (III 93)
{NB: Nete- the plural definite article as antecedent (nucleus, i.e. grammatical center or head) of the relative: “they who” (section 31.1). The predicate here as in exx. 2, 3, 5, 7 is a possessive pronoun (section 1.1)}

5. Petepwi an pe petepwq pe (Ch. 77)

6. Net-againoyute an ne (III 45)

7. Tetetwq te tetetwq an te petepw pe (Or. 158)
{NB: πω 2nd person sgl. fem. possessive pronoun (πω + zero suffix)}

8. ουρμωνε νογωτ ετεννουτε πε ογμαν γνωητ ετεν-θιμονε τε (IV 129)
[OBS. ete ... pe and etenai pe ... are used for “namely” and glossing (“to wit”). Unlike the relative conversion elsewhere (section 31.1-2), this is compatible also with indefinite and zero nouns. See also ex. 10]

9. Nai euteogote pe xooq (IV 76)

10. (πνογι) eutanok pe prigqal nnnoyte (τβασορ) eten- toq pe prigqal hipammanneq (III 79)

11. Petepwq pe pkaq thp (Young 4)

(d) Preterite:

1. Kaiqar nqenrwme ne (and became wolves), nqenarrloc ne (and became demons) (Ch. 72)

2. Nenawbeep gar ne (Ch. 108)

3. Tpetra gar npeqesq pe (III 51, cf. I Cor. 10:4)

4. Neogwine hay an pe (III 75)

3.3 THE COPULAR PATTERN: # nominal/pronominal theme (subject) + copula (pe, more rarely te) + nominal rHEME (predicate) #: see Table B3.

The theme in this pattern is characteristically context-bound, e.g. (and most frequently) resuming a preceding noun and giving it thematic status; in this role the pattern is used for glossing or explicating preceding text.

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
* Polotsky, Nominalsatz parr. 46-55; Shisha-Halevy, “Patterns”, “Discovery Procedure” 165f.
1. πωοψωυς ντενυμε νρψμε πε ουμετρικε αω ετη-ρη-μαζον (Ch. 98)
   {NB: ε-τη- "not to ...", the preposition ε- "to" followed by -τη- negating the infinitive}
2. πελα γνρμαιο πε ΝΑ (Ch. 98)
   [OBS. The rheme (predicate) here is the infinitive ΝΑ]
3. ηεληκης τηρης ηναβιος πε γελπιζε επνα ηπνουμε πευα-γην (Ch. 99)
4. πεγνουμε γερ πε Ραμε (IV 183)
5. πεγνουμε αν πε ΠΕ (Ch. 109γ.)
6. ην γερ πκεφαλην ηηνεγαφη αν πε πεγγελιαιον (Wess. 9 130α)
7. πζωβ ηνηκαληος πε γωβ βημ ηναβον πζωβ ηναεβης πε γωβ βημ ηνπονηρον (Wess. 9 177β)
8. τηνυιε νανομια βημ πε βσολ τηνυιε ηνηκαληοσινιε βημ τε νεμε (A II 494)
   [OBS. τε is a feminine form of the copula, here following a feminine theme]
9. ογκουμ ηηπνωκ αι εβολ ηπνομος πε της-ρη-λανω
   ηηνουχ... αλλα παπκ εβολ ηπνομος πε της-ρη-λανω επηγηρ (IV 66)
10. τεχτρε νηρμεμε πε ογοεικ ηννυμνοου ηηνκε-τροβη (Rossi 2/3 90)
11. ("Sow the seed at dawn (ηπναγ ηωψρη") πηαγ ηωψρη πε τηςτωψρε ζημη (P 131.5 43 99)
   [OBS. The theme (subject) resumes here an element of the preceding context, which is then glossed by the theme (predicate): this is a characteristic role of this pattern]
12. ("The demons have gathered in their dens (ζηνεγψβη") ηνψβη
    δε νε ηςη ηηρβμε ηντνμε (IV 177)
13. ("Vipers and vipers' sons") ηηνψη ηε πκεψψη ηηκη-πκαζ ηε ζελαλη βημ (Ch. 139)
   {NB: πκεψψη relative present: "which crawl"}
14. ("The glory of God shall be in the islands of the sea") ηελασηα
    πε πκοκμος ηνκοςος ηε ηεκκανηα ηηπεκε αω νετο-
    πος ζηνκπαζ τερη (Ch. 141)
15. (Glossing Job 6:7) πηνγι δε πε πναβολος αω πεπψηνου
    πε ηνομια βημ (Rossi 2/3 89)
16. ("Woe to them who will turn impious (αεβης) amongst you")
    αεβης βη ρεττηζ ηεβολ ηηεντολη ηηενειοτε ρεττηζο
ἐβολὲς ἰπῳξὲ ἰπξοεἰς ἐν ἑντοςεῖ Ἴ-κετ-ὑτογῳοὺ Ἴκιογῃ (III 152f.)
{NB: the rhemes (predicates) are definite relative present forms: 

κετ-ὑτογῳοὺ ἐβολὲς "they who reject", ἱπξοεἰς ἐν ἑντοςεῖ "they who hate". 

Both are followed by the direct-object marker Ἴ-κετ-ὑτογῳοὺ 

definite relative present predicating a prepositional phrase: "they who are on (ἐ-κ-) their bosom (τογῳοὐ Γ), i.e. "their neighbours"

17. (I asked:) ἵμ ἐν πναῖ (they answered:) πναὶ ἐν παγκοὶ πανος-

tολοὶ (IV 198) 

{OBS. ἵμ ἐν πναῖ, πναὶ ἐν ...: note the alternation of the delocutive 

pattern in the inquiry with the copular in the response)

3.3.1 THE COPULAR PATTERN CONVERTED (see Tables B3, G)

(a) Circumstantial (ἐ- + copular pattern): "... being ...", also adnominal 

(27-30)

(b) Relative (ἐτε- + copular pattern): "who ..." (31-33)

(c) Preterite (ἐ- + copular pattern): past tense, hypothetical condition 

and result (39-41)

(a) Circumstantial:

1. (According to the Apostle's "He who worked at us",) ἐπαὶ ἐν 

πνοῦτε (III 33)

2. (see) ε-γρωμὲ εὐρημοῖο τινεπτελεῖον επεχράν ἐν ἱα-

θαῖοὶ (Mt. 9)

{NB: εὐρημοῖο adnominal circumstantial present (sections 15.1.1, 

27.1), "sitting": the two circumstantials here qualify the indefinite 

γ蛩-)

(b) Relative:

1. πειζὼν εἰμελαξίτον ἐτε-τεύφγςἰς ἐν κιμ ἅτεπαπε 

ἐπεχτ (III 49)

{NB: ἐτε- = Ἴ-}

2. κετετεγυγκῶι ἐν ἰπῳκ ἰμακ (Ch. 37) 

{NB: κετε- definite determinated relative, "they who". Similarly in 

text 3; the rhemes in 1-3 are infinitives)

3. κετεπεγογῳὼ ἐν εςγὶς εςγὶς εςγὶς ἰπενξρμὰ γία-

πκας (Ch. 86)
(d) Preterite:

1. ενεπεκνούτε αν πε ἡτίκ (Ε 67)
   {NB: ενε-, circumstantial preterite as remote or hypothetical condition (section 41). ἡτίκ possessed form of ἡ with a 2nd sgl. masc. possessor suffix pronoun}

3.4 ASSORTED PATTERNS, COMBINED

1. ἀνον-νίμ ἡ λεν-ογ λε νενώι (III 107)
2. ἀνονεπεφ-νοβε Ὅτος λε οὐγετόγας πε (III 142)
   {NB: οὐγετόγας nominalized relative present (section 31.1.1): “one who is holy”}
3. ἀνονεπεφ-μαλ ἁγ ύ Ὅτος πε πεπαρχαίν ἁγ ύ πενήρο (IV 34)
4. (The woman who says:) ἀγγογαραθενος εογει αν τε (Α 1162)
   {OBS. εογει “one (fem.)”, resuming ογ- in οὐγαραθενος: cf. “one” resuming the indefinite article in English and other European languages}
5. τταπρο ἡπαντ ογογγυν ὁ μ ὃ τε ἀγ οὐγαρ ἁτεφ-ψυχν με νεισποτογ (IV 59)
   {NB: παντ = πατ-ŋητ}
6. πεκνούτε πε ἡτίκ ἁγ ύ ἁτεφ-ογαρκικον ττδρ (P 131.6 88 rb)
7. πηρασκαθενος μεν ναμε πε πεπνα ετογας ... ἁγ ύ παγ-λος αν πε (Α 11403)
   {NB: ετογας: relative present, “who is holy”}

(*) 3.5 SOME SPECIAL NOMINAL SENTENCE RHEMES or PATTERNS

(a) Zero-determined rheme (predicate) in the delocutive pattern, corresponding to the predication of an adjective in English (predicating an abstract quality)
(b) Adverb predicated in the delocutive pattern (19-20)
(c) The reiterated noun/personal pronoun as rheme of the theme πε, predicking the immutability of the delocutive theme; on “still” is a component of this pattern
(d) The “ἀνοκ πε” pattern, meaning “it is I”, “I am in existence”, “I am he”, “I am someone important”
(e) The “balanced” pattern, equating the rheme and theme terms in a logically irreversible “algebraic” proposition

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
* Polotsky, Nominalsatz parr. 31-33; Shisha-Halevy, “Patterns”, “Discovery Procedure” 163 ff.

(a)
1. ἔκας ἡς τε σωτῆς ενεἰσάξε (A I 176)
2. ιόβε πε πεναν ρώμε αν (RE 10 161)
   [OBS. negates the predicative term ρώμε]
3. (An exquisite house) ἐμοίε σε ναγ εροq (A II 114)
   (NB: the circumstantial converter, marking the Nominal Sentence as adnominal to (qualifying) the indefinite οὐν\{)
4. ωπε πε χοου (A I 210)

(b)
1. ἔντεις οι σε αβρααμ ην-ιακ ἤν-ιακ υβ (Ch. 75)
2. ωα-πειμα τε τετίμιντ-γντ νουωτ ηνιαα (P 130.1 135 333f.)
   [OBS. ἤνι- here forms the abstract noun corresponding to the concrete ουσινε νουωτ]
3. επιεκενη νυττι πε υρπ-θυττ (III 46)

(c)
1. νεκράνχγε χαω νεκτωχ χινθροπ ἤςογ ἤςογ σε υπ (III 42)
2. νεκραβ πεκράβ σε αγω ἤςοκ ἤςοκ σε υπ (Ch. 21)
3. ηνσωτ δε-ήςογ ἤςογ σε υπ (Ch. 143)
4. (Of Christ’s Church) ἤςον σος σε υπ (III 31)
5. ουκλουλε παραγε μνογ εντοφ ἤςοφ σε υπ ... ἤχαρετικος ετσοσοι αυγεθοοι πιράςε μνογ εντοφ ἤςογ σε υπ σε εμπογωισε (Ch. Pr. 36 201)

(d)
1. (Who created them?) ην ἤςον σε αγω πεκρίστωt (Orig. 309)
   (NB: ην ... αν rhetorical question, presupposing an affirmative answer: “It is, isn’t it ...?”)
2. τς ηςαπ σε ἤςοφ σε μνοογ σε αγω ἤςοφ σε ηνογεισ αν (Ch. 63ff., cf. Heb. 13:8)
3. (You cry out:) θαν τε εντοσ ας σε (Ch. 23)
FIRST PART

[OBS. Contrast the feminine rhyme (predicate) pronoun with the invariable πε ("it", "ce", "es"), with τε predicing the definite noun οίνη]

4. (It is the monks that are supposed to fast.) Ιησοῦς ο ὑμέν ας Πε (Ch. 102)

5. άνοικ πε προσεκ (A I 370)
[OBS. This is the "theological" existential "ανοικ πε"]

(e)

1. νεκκαρπος ἡπονηρον πε ονογος λγῳ ονογος πε ονοχ (P 130.2 109 νο)
   {NB: ονογο, ονοχ possessive pronouns: "theirs", "yours"}
2. ππρο πεξε πηνηρ οππρο πετε-νεκβυηε ον ονεκβυηε
   χιν-ταρκη οπεσωι (RE 10 162)
   {NB: πετενεκ-... "You whose....."
3. οεμελος πε οενεμελος (A II 2)
4. ανοικ πε Ιησος (III 22)

(*) 4 THE PROPER NAME: SELECTED SPECIAL CONSTRUCTIONS

(a) Determination. The personal Proper Name is normally not deter-
   mined, and functions in many ways like a personal pronoun. Some
   place-names differ in this respect.

(b) The Proper Name as nucleus (grammatical center of its construction).
   The Proper Name is qualified (expanded) appositively, by a noun
   apposition that is usually definite or by a definite relative verb form.
   The expansion marker ή (1.2-1.3) expresses possession only.

(c) The Proper Name as expansion (satellite, grammatical periphery).
   The Proper Name itself may "name-identify" (expand) an appellative
   (common) noun, in appositive or conjunctural (κε- "quoting")
   constructions.

(d) The Proper Name as' theme (predicate): naming constructions,
   name-identifying constructions.

(a)

1. Πεκαμότ υιαβαλ πακακος ην-ευη ην-ιαβετ ην-ιεακ ην-
   ωσειφ (III 173)
2. άνακακα υζααλ·άκαααα (E 76)
3. Αβρακχ Αβρακχ (Genesis 22:11)
[OBS. The Proper Name is reiterated in address ("vocative"), esp.
in the Scriptures]
4. ἵνα ταξιμεύση  ματαμοῖ (P 130.2 100 νο)
   (NB: ματαμοῖ imperative of a causative verb (section 8), with a
   1st person sgl. object: “tell me”)
5. ὅρθος ἴσοπον ἴσομον ὑγιόμορφα (III 132)
6. πεπίσκοπος ἱκαρχαρικ ἴτησεσπότανια (III 109)
7. τσ TableRow:1 align:italic;  tbody tr td {color: #333333;} TableRow:2 text-align: inherit;  tbody tr td {font-size: 14px;}
   TableRow:3 text-align: inherit;  tbody tr td {font-weight: normal;}
8. ἡτοθελικοῦ ἱπταλλακτικ (III 99)
9. ἔκελλῆς ἔκελλῆς (III 167)
   (NB: ἔκελλῆς = τ-ὑπογραφή)

(b)
1. παγόδος πανοπολος (IV 198)
2. ἵεπεροδίες (III 224)
3. ἀπολλων περιπατδος (Α 1 386)
4. τσ TableRow:1 align:italic;  tbody tr td {color: #333333;} TableRow:2 text-align: inherit;  tbody tr td {font-size: 14px;}
   τ TableRow:1 align:italic;  tbody tr td {color: #333333;} TableRow:2 text-align: inherit;  tbody tr td {font-weight: normal;}
   TableRow:3 text-align: inherit;  tbody tr td {font-size: 14px;}
   TableRow:4 text-align: inherit;  tbody tr td {font-weight: normal;}
8. ἱατριας τσ TableRow:1 align:italic;  tbody tr td {color: #333333;} TableRow:2 text-align: inherit;  tbody tr td {font-size: 14px;}
   τ TableRow:1 align:italic;  tbody tr td {color: #333333;} TableRow:2 text-align: inherit;  tbody tr td {font-weight: normal;}
   TableRow:3 text-align: inherit;  tbody tr td {font-size: 14px;}
   TableRow:4 text-align: inherit;  tbody tr td {font-weight: normal;}
10. τσ TableRow:1 align:italic;  tbody tr td {color: #333333;} TableRow:2 text-align: inherit;  tbody tr td {font-size: 14px;}
   τ TableRow:1 align:italic;  tbody tr td {color: #333333;} TableRow:2 text-align: inherit;  tbody tr td {font-weight: normal;}
   TableRow:3 text-align: inherit;  tbody tr td {font-size: 14px;}
   TableRow:4 text-align: inherit;  tbody tr td {font-weight: normal;}
9. ἔκελλῆς ἔκελλῆς (III 166)
   (NB: πεπίσκοπος ἱκαρχαρικ ἴτησεσπότανια determined (definite) relative perfect
   (sections 6.1.1, 31.1) in apposition to the Proper Name: “he whom
   you (pl.) murdered” (the verb ἔστα")
7. (not shenoute) σερκιοκ παγόδος οὐρώμε  ἔκελλῆς (Act.
   13: 7)

(c)
1. παρχιεπισκοπος κύριας (III 89)
2. πετάηστ ἱατρ-γνη φάραω (III 50)
3. πάκτας ιωβ (III 78)
4. πεπανόμος ἱπταλλακτικός (III 84)
5. πεπτόγας ιώζαννις (III 106)
   (NB: πεπτόγας normalized relative, “one who is holy”)
6. πρεπόνους πεπανόμος (IV 127)
7. οὐχ οἴον ἱκαρχαρικ (III 59)
8. πεπανόμος οἴον ἱπταλλακτικός (BM 253)
   (OBS. Note the affinity of zero-determined appellatives with Proper
   Names; the former are in this case “lexeme” or “notion” names]
9. πασεβνός οἴον ἱπταλλακτικός (Wess. 9 133b)
10. οὐ πε πεπαν ἱπταλλακτικός (A 1 391)

(d)
1. περπαν πε βηρῶν (Rossi 2/3)
2. (not shenoute) οὐπολικ ἐπερπαν πε ναζαρῆ (Luc. 1: 26)
{NB: ε- circumstantial converter, marking the naming clause as
adnominal to (qualifying) οὐνομαί}

3. κρονος ετεπετεβε πε ἡφαιστος ετεπτεβε (A I 383f.,
385)

{OBS. The relative Nominal Sentence ετε...πε serving as a
hermeneutical (glossing) construction (section 3.3.1) is not appositive,
even when describing a Proper Name}

4. πα ι ετῆμαγ ετεισμανα πε (IV 26)

{NB: ετῆμαγ “who is there”, “yonder”: relative present predi-
cating the adverb ημαγ “there”}

5. con cng ν ηεσιμων πε ημι-αναρες (III 99)

6. αγμοτε επάκοιει επηκε εκ-εκελεβος (IV 35)

{NB: αγμοτε 3rd person plural perfect form (section 6.1),
predicating οματε: “they called”}

7. (The Pharisees who wished) ετρευμογτε εροογ εβολ ειτοο-
τοι νηρωμε εκ-εραβει αγω, εκ-ερηγε-εσω (III 161)

{NB: ετρεγ- “that they should ...”, the preposition ε- with the
causative infinitive τρεμογτε (9.0.1b); ειτοοτοι see ειτην-}

{OBS. ειτοοτοι ν- an indirect construction (= 3rd-person suffix
pronoun + ν- + noun) for attaching a nominal possessor to an
intimately possessed noun (in this case, τωρε (τοοτε) “hand”;
“they” in ετρεγ- is generic (“ impersonal”), serving with εβολ
ειτην- to express the passive}

5 THE ADVERB PHRASE

Adverbs (lexemes, inanalyzable) are rare: ταί “here”. Prepositional
phrases (preposition + noun, with the pronominal form of the preposi-
tion, i.e. its glossary form; preposition + (suffix) pronoun, with the
preposition in its special pronominal alternant form: ἐμι-νη ἐnc “in the
house”, ἐμι-νητ-ο “in it (him)”, ἐμι-νηρωμε “with the people”,
ἐμι-ημα-γ “with them”.

The three fixed phrases εβολ “out” (ε- + βολ)

ἐξογα “in(to)” (ε- + ογα)

ἐξοα “up” or “down” (ε- + οα), in turn

further specified by prepositional phrases. The whole complex usually
modifies verb lexemes (infinitives).

BIBLIOGRAPHY:

Stern pass. 512-588; Steindorff pass. 174-206; Till pass. 233-240; Vergote
1. ἐπιπεδοῦ (III 138)
2. ἔτοιμομεν ἡνοῦς (Or. 166)
3. εἰσαγοντε ἡκέ (Or. 168)
4. ἔτειζε (IV 80)
5. ἡμω (Ch. 76)
6. εβολ ἐπιπεδά ἐτει ἡν ἐτιθαι ἐτιθετῖ (IV 79)
7. γενασω επικας (A II 298)
8. ἔδεικτο ἡν ἐν τενοι (III 98)
9. γοίεν ἐτιθετῖ (IV 28)
10. γενκατακας (IV 81)
11. ὁμαρατενψυκτ (IV 112)
[OBS. The definite article here is specified by a prepositional phrase]
12. ποσο ἀλήθες (A II 18)
13. γενατογενετ ἐν φανερ (P 130.4 125 37)
14. ετεου (Or. 157)
15. ετεπαи (Or. 156)
16. ἦμ εβολ ἡντ (Or. 154)
17. ετιητογεν (Or. 164)
18. ἦμεν ἡντ (III 201)
   {NB: ἡντ: 2nd sgl. fem. of ἡ-/ἡτ = "in"}
19. κατο ἐν εβολ (III 202)
   {NB: ἐν: 2nd sgl. fem. of ἐ-/ἐν = "to"; κατο see κω}
20. εχοος ἐν (III 202)
   {NB: εχοος: e- + infinitive (ἀκω with 3rd sgl. fem. object, "it")}
21. ἠταν ἐρο (III 201)
22. ἑυγομον ταχ (Ch. 114)
23. ἠτου εχοοι ἐπεκαμιν ἡτον (E 82)
24. ἡκω ἠκου εὐεγκυκλωθ (E 83)
25. ἡσκ εβολ ἐπικοτ (E 85)
26. ἡπε εχραι εχων (E 91)
27. ἠσ ἡμα επεκει (Or. 155)
28. ἠσατε ἡμε τενοι 2 εκατακας (III 203)
29. ἡσενοει εχραι εὑεγκονε (E 91)
30. ἡσ ἡμα (E 87)
31. ετεινμ ἐτεου ετιητ ἡμε (Wess. 9 112)
   {NB: ετιητ 1st person sgl., ἡμε 2nd person sgl. fem. forms of
   the prepositions ετε-, ἡμ-}
UNIT (II): THE TENSE-BASE CONJUGATION (TRIPARTITE PATTERN)
(Sections 6-7)

6 MAIN-SENTENCE conjugation:

6.1 The PERFECT base: α- (affirmative), ʰνν(ε)- (negative)
6.1.1 The perfect, converted

6.2 The AORIST base: ωα(ρε)- (affirmative), ʰε(ρε)- (negative)
6.2.1 The aorist, converted

6.3 ʰνπατ(ε)- "NOT YET":
6.3.1 ʰνπατqcωτν converted

6.4 The OPTATIVE ("Third Future") base: ε- ... ε- (affirmative), ʰνε-
(negative)

7 DEPENDENT CLAUSE conjugation:
7.1 ωαντ(ε)-

7.2 TEMPORAL: ʰντερε- ("since-", "after-", "having ...")

7.3 CONDITIONAL: ε - ... ωαν-, ερωαν- ("if-", "when(ever)")
   negated: ε - ... ωαντν/-ερωαντνι-

7.4 The CONJUNCTIVE: "... and ...", "... or ..." ʰν-/ʰτε-, negated:
   ʰν- ... τν-/-ʰτετνι-

6-7 THE TENSE-BASE CONJUGATION (Table C) conjugates a
verb phrase, consisting of the infinitive discontinuously preceded by a set
of tense prefixes for an actor (noun phrases, demonstrative or indefinite
pronouns, or a suffix pronoun, with a special presuppositional base often
used); the verb phrase (base + infinitive) is predicate (rHEME), the actor
is subject (theme).

NB: (1) The nominal actor can either occur after the base, in substitu-
tion to the actor suffix (α-q-cωττι / α-πρωμεν cωττι), or follow the
whole conjugation form in apposition to a 3rd person suffix, in which case it must be introduced by ṅi- (ᾳq̣e-wtīm ḵi-πṛmē).

(2) the direct object of the verb is constructed in two different ways:
(I) immediately following the infinitive — a nominal object combined with a special pronominal (or "construct state") form of the infinitive: ᾳq̣e-tēm-πṛmē, and a pronominal suffix object combined with the special presuffixal (or "pronominal state") form of the infinitive: อาทtēmē-q.
(II) introduced by the preposition (for a nominal object) or (for a pronominal suffix object).

6 THE MAIN CLAUSE conjugation pattern consists of a set of affirmative/negative pairs of bases for every tense, with the sector interposing between base and infinitive, i.e. infixed in the noun phrase:
# base (affirmative) + actor + infinitive #
(e.g. ᾳ-q̣-c̣wtīm "He (has) heard"),
# base (negative) + actor + infinitive #
(e.g. ��π̣-q̣-c̣wtīm "He has not heard/did not hear")

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
POLOTSKY, "Conjugation System", parr. 1-4, 7, 26; VERGOTE par. 159

6.1 THE PERFECT BASE (Table C(I)):

Affirmative: ENTIC + actor + infinitive - ᾳq̣e-wtīm
Negative: ��π̣- + pronominal actor + infinitive - ��π̣q̣c̣wtīm
��π̣tē- + nominal (or demonstrative/indef. pron., also 2nd sgl. fem. zero suffix) actor + infinitive - ��π̣p̣ṛmē c̣wtīm

The Coptic perfect corresponds approximately to the Latin perfectum, or the English (and generally West European) past simple and present perfect tenses combined. Note its narrative function, with conjunctionless (as syndetic) coordination of several progressing perfect forms.

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
STERN parr. 374, 392; STEINDORFF parr. 334-338, 359-360; TILL parr. 313, 315; VERGOTE par. 159(1); LAMBĐIN parr. 7.1, 8.2, 10.1-10.3

(a) Affirmative:
1. ᾳ-tēmē emate (III 15)
2. ��q̣wē bānwē ēpōq (III 38)
FIRST PART

1. αἰναγ εὔρασον (IV 125)
   (NB: preposition governed by αἰναγ; -γ the indefinite article following ε-)  

2. α-γ-τάκω ἄγηγαν ἄνεβαν  

3. ἀγοσώῃ ἀγεσ-πάβε ἑρούμ εὐραξ αὐσεβ-πειξο ἀγ-  
   ριογε ἐρομ ἀγσωβε ἂμομ ἂγ'-καψ ἑκωμ (III 101)  
   (NB: εὐραξ-, ἑρομ-, ἂμομ-, ἑκωμ- are the pronominal forms of  
   the prepositions εὑρ-, ε-, ἂ- (dir. object) and ἐκ-)  

4. ἀνε-παρ ἡν ἀγω ἀνεσώμ- ἑγαξ (Leyd. 332)  

5. ἄγνωτ ἄνε ἄνενογαοом (III 202)  
   (NB: ἄνε ἂ-: “in the manner of”, “like”)  

6. αὑρσει ἄν-κι-τεφία εὑρα εροι ἐη-πολέμος ἂμα-  
   νόκ ἀγωτ ατ’ ογὺν (III 38f.)  
   (NB: ἂ-: preposition, governed by αὑρσει, preceding the infinitive  
   αγωτ- τ reinforcer or augens, in the 1st sgl.)  

7. ἄγνπλα ἂμος ἄντες ἂν-νίανομος (Ch. 122)  

8. ἄσες ἐπεγὸτὶς (P 131.5 63 νο)  

9. ὀγλοσύν ἄνογς χίμα κατάκ αὐτάς ἄνι-πνοτε (IV 37)  

10. ἄμσωγον ἄμσας αὐτάς ἄμος ἄμχογ εροο (IV 198)  

11. ἄμπε ἄμενταγρος ἀνογαζ ἂς-πνοεις (III 72)  

12. ἀτεφ- ἄον (III 49)  

13. [OBS. For ἂ- “become”, see text 18]  

14. ἄττετενξύντα ἄησεν ἄσκ-ἀκαλος ἄ-ἐντετενξυακτε  
   ἄττετενξύντατς ἄσι ... ἄττετενξ-θύτις ἄης ἄ-ἐντετενξυακτε  
   (III 135)  
   (NB: ἄ-ἐντετενξυακτε and ἄ-ἐντετενξυακτε are two circum-  
   stantial interlocutive Nominal Sentences (section 3.1.2); ἂ- ... ἂ-  
   (ἐπε) “render”, “make into”)  

15. ἄσοντὶς (P 130.2 24 555)  
   (NB: the actor here is pronominal and “zero” — the 2nd person sgl.  
   feminine suffix: α- φ- ἄσοντὶς)  

16. ἄρετνοογ ἐς ἄνα (Leyd. 410)  
   (NB: ἄρε- a variant form of the perfect base before the 2nd sgl.  
   fem. zero pronoun)  

17. ὀγοῦμα ἄκαρτόν ἄ-ογρακκων ἄγω ὁγοῦ ... ὁγ-  
   ωνων ἄ-ογρακκων (RE 10 160)  
   [OBS. ἂ- “become”: the “copular” ἂ-, prenominal form of the  
   infinitive ἐπε)  

18. ἄ_cont_ (III 151)  

19. ἂ-πνοε ἄρο ἐροο (III 151)  

20. ἂποεις κεταοο εβολ (Ch. 26)  

...
THE FORMAL-FUNCTIONAL SYSTEM

{NB: ττττττ τ3rd person plural pronominal object with the causative verb ττττ}  

21. ἀλλαζόμενον κοὐ-νωεις ἡπειογοεῖσθαι αὐ-παγγεῖον αὐ- 
ογονών ἀν ἁγαθό-κακος εὐθανάσια ἡπογνόνον ἰδιμν (III 85)  
{NB: παγγεῖο; presuffixal form of the infinitive παγγεῖον, with a 3rd 
person plural object}  

22. ἀμπτικτος ἔνοεις (III 72)  
{OBS. ἔνο- “do, make”: the “transitive” auxiliary ἔνο- (prenominal of 
ἔνος), deriving compound verbs from nouns}  

23. ἀγαζ ἄρ ἄγαζ ἁμίτρεφσιογα ἐτεο-πείμεθα ἁμίτρεφτων ἔ 
τεσις ἂνοες ἡγετό ἐποτοτ (IV 188)  
{NB: ἄγαζ - see ἄγαζ; divide ἁμί-μίτρ-εφ- ἁμί-μιτρε 
φτω}  

24. ταῖ τε ἐντσυνάργυν ἄποιγαν διαξοεῖσθαι ἐμπι 
τον ἐν οῦν ἐγώ-ἐλεον ἰδιμν (Ch. 145)  
{NB: ταῖ τε ἐν “thus”, “this is the manner”}  

25. τεχαπικ ἁμίτρομαξος ... ἁαθαμακ (III 206)  
{NB: ἁαθ- a variant form of the 2nd sgl. fem. perfect; ἁαμακ: 
see ἁαμακ}  

26. ἀμιζουε ἡπογνόν ἡγους (A I 151)  
27. ἀμεστῳ (A I 445)  
{NB: ἀμεστῳ - see ἀμεστῳ}  

(b) Negative:  
1. ἁμπαζ-ατίς ὀδαὶ ἁμπαζ-ατί (A I 203)  
2. ἐτεο-ου ἐν ἁπειροτῆ ἐναι ἁπειροεῖν ἰδαὶ (IV 187)  
3. ἁπαζ-ατί ἐτείμαι ἂνοες (Wess. 9 163d)  
{NB: ἐτείμαι “which is there”, “yonder”, rel. present predicking 
an adverb}  
4. ἁπμετίνωντε (BM 253f. 159)  
5. ἁποπομ-ἀναγ ἁποτ (III 57)  
{NB: ἁποτ: the preposition ἁποτ with the 1st sgl. suffix (-τ 
zeroed after a final -τ)}  
6. ἁπομ- ὀδα-πνοεὶς ἁγω ἁπογυπτὶς ἰκεῷ ἁπειροπαξι 

7. ἀλεξανδρος πνημομίων ἁγω ὀν πνημῶς πνημομίων ἁ 
παξε ἁπαμαγ ἂνοπ ἁγω ἁπογυκ ἁπειροεῖς ἁπει 
τομε (III 32)  
{NB: ἁπαμαγ: 3rd person plural with ἁπαμαγ, see ἁπαμαγ}  
8. ἁπαξ-ἀπειρογυκ ὄμ-πνογ ἀπογυκ ἀνόκ (III 21)  
{NB: ἁπογυκ, ἁπογυκ are 1st sgl. and 2nd sgl. fem. pronomi-
nal objects of cooye; ἤπε- 2nd sgl. fem. actor. ἀνοκ reinforce or augens)

9. ἤπε-ζοτε ἔντη ἦπνουτε (Leyd. 317)
   {NB: ἤπε- 2nd sgl. fem. form of the neg. perfect; ἔντη = "before"

10. ἦπνοῦτ (III 158)
    {NB: ἰντ 1st sgl. object zeroed after the final -τ of the pronominal form of ἰνε}

11. ἀπεθανοῦ ὄοογ ἐντή ὄοογ ἀπεκαφα ὄοογ ἀπε- ἦνοσε ἐν ἦνοσε ἦν ἦσασε ἦπα ἦσα ἦση (IV 23)
    {NB: ἦση possessed form of ἦσ (1st plural possessor))

12. ἀπεθανα ἀπεζοτε ἀπερήθειν ἀπεκαφα ἀπεδόντ ἀπε- καρο ἀπεκαφα ἀματε ἀτείμνη ἀρομε ἐτήοσε ἐτεγῦσα (A I 80)

6.1.1 THE PERFECT CONVERTED (Tables C(l))

(a) Circumstantial ἐ-ἀκος ὁμ "he having heard", "after/since he had heard"; adnominal; "... and then he heard" (in narrative) (27-30)
   Negative ἐ-Ἀκος ὁμ

(b) Relative ἔντ-Ἀκος ὁμ (ἔρο) "who (whom) he heard/has heard" (31-33)
   Negative ἔτε-Ἀκος ὁμ (ἔρο)
   NB: the relative perfect is often written ἔτ-Ἀκος ὁμ

(c) Second Tense (Second Perfect) ἔντ-Ἀκος ὁμ "(It is ...) that he heard/has heard" (34-38)
   Negative ἔτε-Ἀκος ὁμ "(It is ...) that he did not hear/has not heard", ἔταἈκος ὁμ ... ἦν "(it is) not (...) that he heard/has heard"
   NB: the Second Perfect (affirmative) is often written ἔντ-Ἀκος ὁμ

(d) Preterite ἐ-Ἀκος ὁμ "he had heard" (40-41). (In the protasis of a hypothetical condition ἐνταἈκος ὁμ)
   Negative ἐ-Ἀκος ὁμ (ἐνεἰἈκος ὁμ in the protasis of a hypothetical condition).
   NB: the preterite form is often followed by ἐπε, the function of which is not entirely clear. It seems to characterize the preterite form as background.

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
Stern parr. 423-424, 376; Steindorff parr. 374, 378, 465, 472; Till parr. 316.
THE FORMAL-FUNCTIONAL SYSTEM

* Nom. Transposition parr. 16-18

(a) Circumstantial:

1. ΑΚΤ-ΣΤΗΝ ΜΕΝ ΕΠΕΨΩΑΧΕ ΕΤ ΕΜΗΣΕ ΕΑΚΠΑΡΑΒΑ ΔΕ
         ΓΩΩΓΗ ΝΝΕΨΚΕΨΩΑΧΕ ΤΗΡΟΥ (III 64)
         {NB: ΣΤΗΝ see 2H}

2. ΑΚΜΕΡΙΤΗ ΠΑΡΑΠΕΝΙΠΥΑ ΕΑΚΤ- ΝΝΕΨΗΜΟΝΟΓΕΝΗΣ ΝΥΨΗΡΕ
         ΓΑΡΟΝ (RE 10 162a)
         {NB: ΜΕΡΙΤΗ see ΜΗ (verb); ΓΑΡΟΝ see 2A-}

3. ΑΝΝΟΥ ΝΜΠΕΧΣ ΣΗΜ-ΠΠΑΝΤΙΚΜΑ ΕΑΥΤΟΜΟΝ ΝΝΑΝΑ ΣΗΜ-Π-
         ΠΑΝΤΙΚΜΑ ΕΠΕΨΗΜΟΥ (Ch. 166)
         {NB: ΝΜΠΕΧ see ΜΗ-}
         [OBS. ΕΑΥΤΟΜΟΝ the 3rd person plural actor with a direct object
         to the infinitive convey a notion corresponding to the passive voice]

4. ΑΥΝΑΓ ΕΠΟΧΟΙΝ ΝΠΕΟΣΟΥ ΠΕ ΕΑΨΧΙ ΝΟΥΜΟΡΦΗ ΝΗΜΑΛ ΕΤ-
         ΒΗΝΤΗ ΔΥΨ ΟΝ ΠΝΟΥΤΕ ΧΙΝΗ-ΨΟΡΗ ΕΑΨΨΗΜΕ ΝΡΕΨΨΩΒ
         (IV 36)
         {NB: ΕΤΒΗΝΤΗ see ΕΤΒΕ-}

5. ΕΤΒΕ-ΟΥ ΑΧΣΩΤΗ ΝΚΑ-ΠΝΟΜΟΣ ΕΞΙ-ΜΗΣΕ ΕΜΠΧΣΩΤΗ ΔΕ
         ΝΙΤΟΥ ΝΤΣΩ-Γ ΝΝΕΨΚΕΨΩΑΧΕ ΤΗΡΟΥ (III 64)

6. ΜΕΨΑΚ ΑΛΙΧΙ-ΖΟΙΝΕ ΝΒΟΝΕ ΝΗΤ-ΘΥΤΗ ΝΜΠΙΕΙΜΕ (III 139)
         {NB: ΝΗΤΘΥΤΗ see ΝΗ}

7. ΝΠΝΚΑ-ΣΕ-ΖΩΒ ΝΠΝΚΑΒΕΛΛΑΥ ΝΨΩΧΕ ΝΠΝΤΑΜΟΝ ΕΡΟΟΥ
         (III 94)

8. ΑΥΝΑΟΥ ΝΟΥΨΤ ΟΥΕΙΝΕ Ν ΟΥΕΒΟΤ ΝΟΥΨΤ ΔΥΨ ΟΥΡΟΜΠΕ
         ΔΗ ΝΠΕΝΤ-ΝΟΥΜΗ ΝΑΚ (RE 10 164)
         {NB: ΝΠΕΝΤ- = ΕΜΠΝΗ-}
         [OBS. The circumstantial converter is often zeroed before a syllabic
         nasal consonant (N or Ν)]

(b) Relative:

1. ΝΙΚΕΡΑΥΝΟΥΣ ΕΝΤΑΨΕΙ ΕΞΨ-Ν (III 220)

2. ΝΓΑΜΟΣ ΝΤΑ-ΠΝΟΥΤΕ ΠΑΣΙΟΥ ΔΥΨ ΑΡΤΒΟΩQ (III 27)

3. ΝΚΟΟΥΕ ΤΗΡΟΥ ΕΝΤΑΨΧΟΟΥ (III 64)
   [OBS. Note the position of the reinforcer (augens) which, while
   expanding the object suffix in ΧΟΟΥ, occurs in the second position
   of the prosodic unit]

4. ΝΕΝΤΑΨΙΩΛΑΣΕ ΝΜΟΝ (Ch. 118)
5. ταβαγῶν ετεμνῆται-πάρε (III 165)
6. νηρώμε νικνοq ετεμνογεί νιρ-νοβε ἡν-επιβογαν νιμ ἠπο-

ηριφερ εφογ ηηεχριτιανος (III 89)
7. νε-βινε ετεμνε-κεουα ἀλα (Ch. 17)
8. τμὶτπαρθενος ετεμνηκει νηωάε ετεμνητι νη-πρωμη

ηαοσ ηαδαπιος παρχιεπικοπος (III 108)
{NB: -c in ετεμνητι refers back to the antecedent: “about
which ...”}
9. νεωάε ετεμπηετηνογονιν αξ-ογ νε (II 75)
10. απανοβε ἄρω πετεμπηνηογν-νοβε ἁπίνονε ἄρων η

ετεμνη (A I 86)
{NB: απα- ν- “make into” (see ειρε); πετεμπη- definite relative,

i.e. the relative with a def. article as antecedent}

(c) Second Perfect:
1. ἡταγ-ψηνο ερωτεν ετεμενηςβυνε νεοον (III 143)
{NB: ετεν- is emphasized by the Second Perfect: “It is because
of... that ...”; νεοον “which are evil”, relative present}
2. μπενογ ηνοητ ει εφογ ηεηεκυαηωη αεβενη αετεμενη

ετεεειοηε αλλα ντανε ηηεμετενοει εχη-ηεννοβε
(IV 164)
{NB: ε-μετενοει is emphasized by the Second Perfect: “It is in
order to... that ...”}
3. ἄρω νιμ ἡταγαγ-ηταγαγ τηρην ετεπενογχαι (A II

436f.)
{NB: the first ἡταγ- is the relative, the second Second Perfect,
emphasizing ετε-}

(d) Preterite:
1. νεαγει πε ετεχεναπολογια (A II 44)
{NB: πε a “back grounding” morpheme often accompanying the
preterite conversion}
2. νεαγε- παι ον (III 37)
3. νεαγαγε γαρ ερανη γιηεκκαλη (III 37)
{NB: αρε ... εραν- see wge}
4. νεαγοπε γαρ αξ-ογαναλογν πε ετμηκαγ εφωαε (A II

44)
{NB: -c 3rd sgl. feminine object of ωμι, “it”, the fem. pronoun in a
“neuter” sense; ετικαγγ the infinitive (κω, with a 3rd person plural object) negativated by τῳ
5. επεντανογογυ γαρ πε εγγναζε 2κίνομοσ ἱνεντακξοογ (you would not escape their vengeance) (Ch. 95)

6.2 THE AORIST BASE (Table C(I)2):

Affirmative: ὡς- + pronominal actor + infinitive - ὡςκσωτι
        ὡςαρ- + nominal (dem./indef./2nd sgl. fem.) actor +
        infinitive - ὡςαρεπωςε σωτι

Negative: με- + pronominal actor + infinitive - μεκσωτι
        μερε- + nominal (dem./indef./2nd sgl. fem.) actor + infinitive
        - μερεπωςε σωτι

The Coptic aorist expresses timelessness, a general truth, habitude, propensity, natural consequence, approx. corresponding to the English Present Simple. The negative aorist expresses also the lack of (natural) ability (“He cannot ...”, “It is not in his nature to ...”).

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
Stern parr. 377, 393, 396; Steindorff parr. 342-343, 364-365; Till parr. 304-305; Vergote par. 159(3); Lamdin par. 28.1; Young, “Present I”

(a) Affirmative:
1. ὡςαγκος ετε-ποογ ἄσ- ὡςαγ-γοτε 2ηντι ηπρωςε εγκν
   καζνυ (A I 260)
   \{NB: 2ηντι - η, the construction of the preposition 2ηντι - with a
   noun. εγκν καζνυ circumstantial present, “when he is naked”\}
2. εcomplexType εποεικ ηπποογ ... ὡarbonate on ηπποογ eποογ (P 130.4
   104 123)
3. ὡarbonate εποεικ ηπποογ ... ὡarbonate on ηπποογ eποογ (III 204)
   \{NB: both actor of the aorist and object of τειο are the 2nd sgl.
   fem. zero pronoun (reflexive object)\}
4. (The dead sheep, once it is dead,) ὡςαγ-ποογ (i.e. the wild
   beasts’) ὡςαγωςε μαγ ηπε (III 47)
5. ὡarbonate-παεετ γαρ 2ηνπεςκσωςε ειρε ἱομηταςαγε (IV 80)
6. ὡbservableςτε γαρ τογκες-ουτ-των (III 122)
7. εἵπα ηπποκηριδ ηπποκηρις ηρωμε ὡarbonate ταςαγαςος
FIRST PART

παράθεσε ἡρῴμενος μία πίστην τῆς ἡμέρας ἡμῖν ἰδιωτική ἡρῴμενος ἠλάτε (IV 124)

8. μνουρίς-και η νοος ψαρεῖν ψώνει γιγάντας ενανούγ (Ε 73)
   {NB: ενανούγ adnominal circumstantial Adjective Verb, qualifying (sections 22.1, 22.5, 27.1) "that is good"
   }

9. μν ψαρεῖν (ενούγ) τώ χρόνου κοσμευσε (Ch. 103)
   {NB: the infinitive of the aorist is φ̣-(κοσμευσε). The circumstantial perfect qualifies φ̣ημε}

10. ητείςε ψαρεῖν-κοσμευσε ογνήθει ετάλα ἡπερρομόως τηρήσων έπαυς επακείς εκ-αμερίτης ευγογέπος λεγόγο

(b) Negative:

1. αρα μεγαλοῦμεν ἀκοῦσθει σοι τῆς ἡμέρας λίγον ὀγνωμεν τώ (IV 38)
   {NB: τῆς ἡμέρας see μν̣-}

2. μεξρέσεγε χιπτέ μεπούςε (Ζ 189)

3. έτες-ταπάνωθε ρησούςετε εβολαν τήνογεθεν μήρωμε ετπνοβε (ΙΙΙ 194)
   {NB: ετπνοβε relative present; for the verb, see νοβε}

4. μεγεσμεξβομεν εὼλα νέες νούγοβρε ωποι (IV 52)
   {NB: -ωποι- with ομόμοι (see ομο, ονομ) and other infinitives: "be able"
   }  
   {5} ἡπειρικ-ουγμε νερε-πεγάςι γίνεσι νούμε (Α II 435)
   {NB: γν-τ-κε "even in the..."}

6. μεκανωφερούγ Ch. 24

7. μενχωκήμει δην-κιούγινε (ΙII 83)

6.2.1 THE AORIST CONVERTED (Tables C(I)2, G)

(a) Circumstantial: ε-ψαρεῖστι adnominal ("who hears", qualifying an indefinite nucleus; 27)
   Negative ε-μεγκεστι "who/when he does not, cannot hear" (27-30)

(b) Relative: ε-ψαρεῖστι "who hears" (31-33)
   Negative ε-μεγκεστι ετε-μεγκεστι "who cannot, does not hear"
(c) Second Tense (Second Aorist): ε-ὑρισκωτίν “(It is ...) that he hears” (34-38)

Negative ε-ὑρισκωτίν ... ἢ ... “(it is) not ... that he hears”

(d) Preterite: νε-ὑρισκωτίν “He would hear”, expressing past habit/propensity (39-40)

Negative νε-μετοχωτίν

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
Stern part. 426, 427, 433-434; Steindorff part. 374, 378, 465, 474; Tili. part. 327, 334, 461-462; Vergote part. 163(4), 164(5), 165(5), 166(5); Lamdin part. 28.1; Polotsky, “Conjugation System” part. 10-11, 16-18

(a) Circumstantial:
1. γενομένῳ εὑρισκομένῳ (IV 85)
2. ποιοεῖς οὐκριθηνά όνημα πε εμεθεξι- το (III 129)
3. οὐς σωμα εὑρισκομένο (P 130.2 88 το)  
4. (They say “we are praying”) εμεθεξις τῶν (III 92)
5. (They that enter the House of God) εμεθεπορεύεται Ὑογες- 
   ψαλθαν (IV 38)
   {NB: Ὑογεςψαλθαν = εμεθεπορεύεται the preposition e- (gov-
   erned by πορεύεται) zeroed before the syllabic nasal}
6. (We have the Tree of Life, the Cross, shining day and night) 
   εμεθεπορεύοδειν ἁτομπτὲ Ὑο (III 94)

(b) Relative:
1. νε-ﺰῃς εὔεσμίαςποιάαζε εᾶαγ (A II 433)
   {NB: ν ε- άαγ see εἶπε}
2. προούμενε εὑρισκεὶ εχεῖ- πχατ (Ch. 11)
   {NB: προ- see 2ου}
3. πρεπτ πτεςτίκοτο (P 131.6 81 νο)
4. ρτθεσχος ρμβαλ 2ντετταπεξα (III 78)
   [OBS. The def. article antecedent of the relative ρτθεσχος- “the one
   who...”]
5. πνα ετεςερε- χολες αγυε γολε τακο ρῆττα (A II 237 
   = Mt. 6:20))
   {NB: ῥῆττα see ῥη-}
6. ῥὶστο γεσάκαβτε εγούν ρῆςτο γα-μετε-νοικ νε
   (Ch. 23)
   {NB: μετενοικ νε determined relative form of the delocutive
   Nominal sentence}
7. ἰν πεσάξε νε-μετασωιν γολως (Leyd. 345)
   {NB: πεσάξ- determined relative aorist, “the one who...”}
8. ἐνεμεγέσει ἅτωρη ἅγῳ ἅκι ἐνεμεγόγον λ ἀν ἅν (IV 99)
\{NB: ἐνεμεγέσει dct. rel. negated Nominal Sentence: “they 
, that are not...”; ἐνεμεγόγον ἀν ἅν see note to text 6\}
9. ἐνεβάγε ἐνεμέσε (A I 197)
10. ταὶ τῇ ἄ τε ἐσαντώγος ἔνογωσάτω ἐκόλ (III 149)

(c) Second Aorist:
1. ἐγχέ-ἀγγεῖ ν ἀγα-ογχάκ ἐγχέ-ἀγγεῖ 
ήνογμήττακ (III 32)
\{NB: θῆ- is emphasized by the Second Aorist (“It is ... that ...”)}
2. ἐγχαγα
6.3 Ἕπαταςκωτῆς "NOT YET" (Table C(1)3):

ἐπατ- + pronominal actor + infinitive – Ἕπαταςκωτῆς
ἐπατε- + nominal (dem./indef./2nd sgl. fem.) actor + infinitive – Ἕπατεπρῶτες σωτῆς "He/the man has not yet heard"

**Bibliography:**
Stern par. 395; Steindorff parr. 362-363; Till par. 320; Vergote par. 159(2); Lambdin par. 30.5

1. Ἕπατουνὸς ῥῳ ἐνεῳτεκκωγ (III 103)
   {NB: ὅν人为 the pronominal form ("state") of the verb ὅνικα εἰς its alternate form before a pronominal direct object. ἐτεκκωγ theolog the plural form of ἐτεκκωγ}
2. Ἕπατε-τεκττθσίς ῥᾳ σογκἰν ἴνιᾶ οὐς καταπαξακε ὑγας Ἕπασεκεῖνες ἴκαι ἰᾳ τοικειά ἦτεγύκχα ἰᾳ ἰε τετεφυσίς ἦπακωμα (III 224)
   {NB: θθτθσίς = κτικς. σογκιν pronominal form of σογκιν}
3. Ἕπατενωκσί καὶ ὅνῇ ἱα-να-νεψθυ (IV 34)
4. Ἕπαταῖος ῥῳ ἐβολ ζνπκαζογ Ἕπαπεθοοου ἤπεπκαζογ ἐνταἰνῖν ἦ ἐνταϊκοκοκ εἰπαί εἴκωι ἦμαστ (A I 103)
   {NB: ἄνα-πεθοοο: pl. possessive pronoun + det. relative present ("that which is evil"); ὅν- see εἰςε. ἦμαστ 1st sgl. form of ἦμαστ}

6.3.1 Ἕπαταςκωτῆς ("Not Yet") CONVERTED (Tables C 3, G)

(a) Circumstantial ἐ-ἐπαταςκωτῆς "before he has heard"; also adnominal (27-30). Note the especially prevalent ἔξων (ἐ)ἐπαταςκωτῆς (ἐξ-θν "before")
(b) Relative (ἐτε-ἐπαταςκωτῆς) "who has not yet heard" (31-33)

**Bibliography:**
Stern par. 437; Steindorff parr. 378, 465; Till parr. 320, 327-328, 461-462; Vergote parr. 164(4), 165(4); Lambdin parr. 30.5; Polotsky, "Conjugation System" parr. 10-11. 16-18

(a) Circumstantial:

1. ἡμεγογογ ἡμ-ν η Ἕπατουνοκοτῆς ἰαὐς ἤμεγα-τεμχαλ γνακαρίαν ἰητῆς (A II 147)
   {NB: κα- pronominal form of κω}
2. ἀνεσφυγᾷν ἅνωσ ἐπιταχεῖ ἀνεψισμα (Wess. 9 144c)
3. τιμὴρήσατι πε ἀγία ἀγνόησενου λυγ γενοῦ νέ 
νεγαθιε ἐπιταχ—πεναζε ωξη (IV 20)
   {NB: divide τ—μν—ρη—νητ}
4. σεογνη ἀπατογνικ ετέπροσφορα (Ch. 50)
   {NB: σεογνη present (section 15.1) "they cat". ἀπατογ— 
—— ἐπατογ—, with the converter e— zeroed before the syllabic nasal}
5. ἁπεσι— ερο ὦλ—πνεφωμιτ ἐ πνεψτοου ἀζοογ 
ἀπατετήνοογ μαν ἄνογμακαι ἀκατ ἀντ (Z 397)
   {NB: the actor of ἁπεσ—, ἀπατε— (= ἐπατε—) and possessor in 
the possessive article ὄνυ— is the 2nd sgl. fem. zero suffix pronoun. 
This is a rhetorical question.}
6. γεμσήρε χιμ ... ἀπατογνικ εσιλλίκια (IV 103)
   {NB: ἀπατογ— = ἐπατογ—}
7. (Christ, who existed with His Father) ἐπατικταμε̣ ἀγγελος 
ογτε ἀρχαγολος ἀγου ἄνω ἀνικαραφιν (Z 246)
8. (How many tribulations have weighed upon you) ζαο ἀπατεί 
εσογν επιβοι (III 105)
9. ζαο ἀπατογ— ἀπατογ— ἀν (we used not to fear that 
our clothes might be stolen) (IV 105)

(b) Relative:

1. πενειστ ἄξιλο ... πα ᾑ ἔτεμπατιζωκ ἁϊταζιβωκ ἔρατ 
πνογε (III 142)
   {NB: ἀταυ— the form of the perfect (actually Second Perfect) 
following ὁν— "since"}
2. ἕτεμπατογ ει ἕρωτι εροθ (i.e. down to moral disease) (IV 20)
3. ογον γαρ ἕτεμπατογογογν μανικαραγια (III 77)
   {NB: coygυ— pronominal state of coygυ; r alternant of κ after 
a nasal (here a 2nd sgl. masc. suffix as object)}

6.4 'THE OPTATIVE (or "THIRD FUTURE", Table C(I44):

Affirmative: ε- + pronominal actor + ε- + infinitive — εὐεκσωτι 
ερε- + nominal (dem./indef./2nd sgl. fem.) actor + 
infinitive — εὔερπωμεν ετωτι

Negative: νιμε- + nominal/pronominal actor + infinitive — νιμεκσω- 
tι, νηνερπωμεν ετωτι

(a-b) The optative expresses wish, with shades of meaning varying 
according to the actor person and to whether the form is affirmative
or negative. In the 1st persons: willingness/unwillingness, intent, agreement/refusal, exhortation/prohibition. In the 2nd persons: request, desire, polite demand (negative request, prohibition). In the 3rd persons: wish, desire, prayer, "prophetic future".

(c) Following  IMPLIED ("that") or  implied (originally "that let it", in the negative constructed with the circumstantial optative  ).

The optative, affirmative or negative, expresses in all persons purpose ("final clause", "in order that...") and result ("consecutive clause", "so that...")

NB: except for the circumstantial negative optative after  ( and the optative is not converted.

(a) Affirmative:

1.  (Wess. 9 163a)
2.  (IV 65)
   (NB:  = . (1st plur. suffix after the pronominal form of the preposition))
3.  (III 143)
4.  (IV 116)
   (NB:  that is evil", adnominal circumstantial present)
5. (The houses which we have built in the name of your glory)
   (III 218)
   (NB:  pronominal form of the infinitive  with 3rd plur. object)
6.  (III 203)
   (NB:  plur.-definite nominalized relative of the "Adjective Verb"  (sections 22.1, 31.1.1) after the preposition  governed by  '"those that are good")
7.  (IV 74)
8.  (IV 62)
   (NB:  see con)
9.  (IV 207)
   (NB:  relative present, predicating a stative (section 16.1.1) qualifying the antecedent : "that is written")
10.  (IV 75)
(b) Negative:

1. ἰνεκφ-νοεικ ἰνεκσωτῆ ἰνεκσιογε ἰνεκφ- мнτε ἰνογχ (III 64)
2. ἰνεκκτος ἐρων ἱγω ἰνεκνεριτῆ ἀλλα ἐγεσωπε ἁν ἱνογχαζε ἐτεπνογίτε ἐπενκον πε (IV 128)
   {NB: μεριτ: pronominal form of the infinitive με}
   [OBS. Note the concessive ("even though") or adversative ("although") meaning of the circumstantial Nominal Sentence]
3. ἰνεσωπε (III 116)
   [OBS. This is the native Coptic correspondent to the Greek-origin μη γενοίτο]
4. ἰνεκσιογε ἰνειφ- мнτε ἰνογχ ἰνειξι- δολ ἰνειφ- λαλγ ἰκροφ ἵνόγσων (III’20, oath upon entering Shenoute’s monastery)
5. πίσωντι δε ἵνα γει εκσωγ ἱγω ἄρτοι ἰνεκκτος εβολ ἱνογχ (Ch. 124)
6. ἰνεσωρε ωνα εως (IV 168)
   [OBS. Note the generic use of the zero-determinated noun, common in the textual genre of instructions and precepts; cf. also texts 8-9, 11]
7. ἰνελαλγ ὅανμε ἵντη- πνταφ ὑαζε μηλαλγ ἵνσωμε (IV 63)
   {NB: -πνταφ a “heavy” form of the suffixed 2nd person plural, following the pronominal and not με the pronominal form of the infinitive}
8. ἰνεσαειν γραι ἱγκτας †-παρε ερύμε ζίβολ (IV 160)
9. ἰνεσωμε ποκ επχαε εμπατκένεςς γηρν ουγ αμαυ (IV 51)
10. (Books which we do not have and which we need) ἰνεσωρε- ωνα ἱνσωγ γίβολ αξο- ππάλο (IV 72)
    {NB: -ερω- or -ω- after a vowel, preceding the infinitive: “be able to ...” ἱνσωγ see ἰσα-}
11. ἰνεσωμε νοβνεο ἱνσωμε γραι ἱγκτας ειτε ἱσουγ ειτε ὅμανς (IV 80)
12. ἰνεκκρε ἰνογχ εκε† δε ἰνεκανασ ὅπσοες (III 66)

(c) Clauses of purpose and result:

1. αγόοορα εβολ ενεκκρα σεκας εγεσωπε γνογκτrief-
   ομο γνογκταζκε (III 99)
2. αιμακτρογ ἱνσωτη τε-ἱνεκτρπνωε (RE 10 164)
3. ετβε- ογ δε σν αρειπε ἱνιος ἱνεθόγ ἱνεοφτε εβολ
THE FORMAL-FUNCTIONAL SYSTEM

χίν-νογνω βρωμε ψα-νογνωρε ωμη 2γω χιν-νογνω
νεχμε ψα-νογνωπερη ωμη χεκας ερεβωκ ερατογ
ψωτοφ βνογνωρε (III 199)
{NB: πεθογ = πετ-2οογ: nominalized relative present, here
zero-determined: "(anything) that is evil"; 2nd sgl. fem. actor and
possessor.)
4. (You touch and eat every impurity) χεκας εγεμετω εβολ
ζτη-ινε-ννηνεπαρηςο (III 203)
{NB: μεστω 2nd sgl. fem. object with the infinitive μοστε}
5. (Let him eat his bread in righteousness) χε-ννηνεπωμε ναξ
εγνωε (IV 78)
{NB: εγ- the preposition ε- before the indefinite article}
6. (They fear the angel) χε-ννηνεπαταςςε νμος (IV 21)
7. ουνανώγετςς εαγινι νμμαξ χε-εχεσωμυ (IV 62)
{NB: εαγινι circumstantial perfect, qualifying the indefinite noun;
the pronominal form of the infinitive εινε}

7. THE DEPENDENT CLAUSE CONJUGATION (Table C b):
conjugation forms (verbal sentence forms) that do not occur independ-
ently. While they too consist of a verb-phrase ('base ... infinitive') with an
infixed theme actor (noun or pronoun): # base + actor + infinitive #,
they differ formally from the main-sentence conjugation pattern (section 6)
in their negation:
(pronominal actor) # base + actor + -τιν- + infinitive #
(e.g. ηπερευ-τιν-εστι "since he did not hear")
(nominal actor) # base + -τιν + actor + infinitive #
(e.g. ηπερευ-τιν-πρωμε εστι "since the man did not hear").

Being by themselves in dependent status, the dependent-clause conjoin-
gation forms are not converted.

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
POLOTSKY, "Conjugation System" parr. 1-4, 7, 27; VEGOTE par. 161

7.1 "UNTIL" (Table C(II)1): ωαντ-εσεωτι
ωαντ- + pronominal actor + infinitive: ωαντ-εσεωτι
ωαντε- + nominal/dem./indefinite/interr./2nd sgl. fem. actor + infinitive:
ωαντεπρωμε εσεωτι "... until he hears/heard", in narrative or
dialogue.
BIBLIOGRAPHY:
STERN par. 449; STEINDORFF par. 373; TILL. parr. 312, 444; VERGOTE par. 161(4);
LAMBDOIN par. 30.3

1. duxi-vela gar eiwchphi zepnvi npriinkime wantqe ei e2pai
   xepnoos nelipsic (III 103)
{NB: np-veli-kime}
2. npogoei eboal zqntq (i.e. out of sin) wantqoei epootq
   zmanthe (P 130.5 59 vo)
3. nemetnay ei wanteppnyte dwnnt erooy (III 143)
   {NB: metnay: determinated relative, predicating nmay “there,
yonder”: “they who are yonder”, “those”}
4. weme npqoy ... nperwme ewyka-seik ntopooy ethpq
   zrqi nqntq eite qouoy eite czime eite nqob eite kqi
   wantqjuk eboal thpq xin-pysorpi naskellon wantqoei
   eboal zepnpob npacsqa (IV 58)
   {NB: weme npqoy is here adverbial: “during...”; ka- prenomi-
nal (“construct”) form of the infinitive kw}
5. apexere-zhac de on eneg wantebswpe npqoq znpkake
   xero de on npwaxe nmetebw znpoygh wantebswpe
   npowe znpkake ntopymntacwotm (P 130.2 24 554f.)
   {NB: ape-, wante-, nqy-, toy- are all 2nd sgl. fem. (zero suffix)
   forms, of tense base and possessive article. xero imperative}
6. wanteoy wqpe enyiheizeic (III 18)
   {NB: enyiheizeic circumstantial present predicating an adverb
   (prepositional phrase zni-; 19.1.1) “that (lit. “as, while”) we are in
   these straits”}
   [OBS. wanteoy wqpe is usually complemented by the circum-
   stential conversion]
7. wqylna wantnay epzo npexic (A I 467)
8. npugnoqph eboal zepnma npelleet oqte npoyxe-alasal
   npwaxe naq oqte npoyphlasal npwbe naq wantepkxoiec ei
   (A I 63)

7.2 THE TEMPORAL (Table C(II)2): nterepscwotm

ntere- + nominal/pronominal actor + infinitive: nterepscwotm
nterepwrwe cwotm

The Temporal expresses temporal and/or causal dependance, especially
anterior or background action or event, and may be translated by
English "after/since he (had heard)". ἰτερεψεως is a narrative form, with the main clause following (or preceding) it normally being the perfect ἐσως.

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
STERN par. 425; STEINORFF parr. 421, 447-450; TILL par. 319; VERGOTE par. 161(3); LAMBIDIN par. 13.1

1. αἱρασε ἐνᾶτε ἰτερικι ἱνεςται ἰτεκαὶ ἰτεκαϊς (III 13)
2. ἰτερικιπον ἱνα-ἰνεομῆνεις ἰτερεψεις ἱνα ἐγραὶ ἱνα-<
tekkaicis ἱνεσσαγα ἐνοῦττῃ ἐξωξε ἐξωβἰ ἰτείζε γα-
θε (III 33)
3. ἰτερογαπον ἁμογ ἱ ἁμογ ἱμο (III 43)
4. ἰτερογαποκ ιπρωμε καταγεγκαων ἁγω καταπεγεινε 
κατανεγαφα ἁπνούτε νίνε ἐσογν ἐγραἀ ἱοννον ἱων (IV 37)
{NB: ἐγρα = see ἐγρη-}
5. αὖτωτ ἰῃ ἰτερνςως ἐνωξε ἐντοξια ἱπνούτε (III 14)
6. ἰτερεξε-καὶ ἡ ἀμεὶ ἰαπνηνῃς τῆρῃ ἁγω ἰτερεξε-
πρωσ ... ἀποκομε καὶκα δος ὀουσω (III 29)
{NB: ἀμ- is the prenominal form of the infinitive ἀω} 
7. ἁσωπε ἐς ἱογοῦσο ἰτερνςως ἐνωξας ἐντοξια ἱπνούτε 
ἱπανςωτηρ ἁγ-ἀμα ἱπρωμε ἱαογους ἱνπρωμε 
ἀσωμε ὀουσω ᾕλημηνῃς ὀουσμρᾳ (Cal. 41)
8. ἰτερεκαίν ἀμ τοσῆ ἱπανςος ἱακι-κβα ἱμο (P 131.4 
141 40)
{OBS. ἵ-/ἱμο = introduces the direct object of a compound verb (auxiliary + zero-det. noun)}
9. ἰτερεπκοεις ἐς ἱπνοτε μαντοπκατωρ νίνε ἐσογν 
ἐγραἀ ἱοννον ἱων ἁσωπε ἱογυγκα ἱον (ἀγ ἱᾳκι 
<
tηρῃ ἁσωξε ἱαοους ἱαοοους ἱαοουτὴν ἱνεσλε ἐπεγ-
ῖωβ ἱαμογ ζηνπεχας (Cal. 43)
{NB: ἱον (ἀ) adnominal circumstantial present, qualifying the 
indefinite noun ("which is alive")}

7.3 THE CONDITIONAL (Table C(II)3): ἐργασσως

ἐ- + pronominal actor + -γαν- + infinitive: ἐ- ἐργασσως ἐργαν- + nominal/dem./indefinite/2nd sgl. fem. actor + infinitive: ἐργαν- πρωμε σως
**FIRST PART**

*Negatived:* ε- + pron. actor + -γαν- + -τι- + infinitive: ἐγκαν-τι-σωτι (rarely, -γαν- is absent).

εγκαν- + -τι- + nom. (etc.) actor + infinitive: ἐγκαν-τι-πρωμε σωτι

The Coptic Conditional corresponds averagely to an “if and when” conditional clause in English. The conjugation form may be preceded by Ἰοταν ("whenever", esp. "as soon as"), ἐγκαν ("should it happen") or καν ("even if", "even though"). See below, 42-43.

**BIBLIOGRAPHY:**
Stern parr. 420-421; Steindorff parr. 328, 421, 492-494, 496; Till parr. 447-448; Vergote par. 161(5); Lambdin par. 29.1

(a) Affirmative:

1. ἐγκανειρε γαρ ἓταν ἀνταίε-τι-ες ἀνεσω ἡπαλ ἐγκαν-ειρε δε ἑπνα ἀνταίε-τινθαντ ἀνεσω ἑτιντατνα (III 112)
   \{NB: ταιε- prenominal ("construct state") of ἐιρε\}

2. ἐτετιγκανμογ γενετιντατνατατε κιν-τετιντατνατνουτε ψατετιγκανμε ἱμερικ Ἰκαλιμιτιον (III 48)
   \{NB: γανει ρ- "become (as)"
   [OBS. The aorist is a characteristic result clause ("apodosis") after the Conditional]

3. (In monastic instructions:) ἐγκανκωλαγ ἑπνα ἑογωμ ἱνερψω-με ἱνητι δω (IV 103)

4. (Of flies:) ψαγωνωγ εκιν-πεισω εγκανκωλι (III 48)

5. πμοογ εγκανταταγ ἱνηπρι- ψαγωγα ἑογωτ ... πρωμε γωμα εγκανμετετε ἑπνα ἑτογας ἑαγρηγα ἑογωτ
   \{NB: ταγ = pronominal state of τωγ; ἵ- construct state of ειρε; ἑπνα ετογας "the Holy Ghost"

6. ἐγκανπωκ εξογη ενογυ ενψαρεσαλ αργανι αε γν ψαρεσαλ εγκανμοος εψαγ ιψαρεσαλ δω γν ἐγκαντωγυα ψαρεσαλ (III 203)
   \{NB: 2nd sgl. fem. bases and possessive article\}

7. ογομοιο ευ λε ουτε ἑογωβε αν με εγκανεμετε-τερ-
   ρωμε ἱρενχινε (A I 95)
   \{NB: μεστε- construct of μοσε\}

8. ἐγκαν-νεσοογ ὅγαν γιπετυκο εσβαμογ εγκανογογ ἱψαρεσαλ δω γν ἱελακελε (RE.II 16a)
{NB: εφαγ- relative aorist; οὐομ- pronominal of οὖν}

9. ἐργανπρυκε μεγεπνοβε ωρεπνούτε ἃ- βομ
       ἰπνοβε εὑρεῖ εὑρη (Ch. 68)
10. ("Come and search my dwellings") εὕσπε εἐκανδι-εἰα-
          ολον ἵητογ (Ch. 43)
       {NB: ἰν- construct of ὅνε}
11. ("You shall not arise eyeless") καν εὐσανπρυκ ἰνεκβαλ (III 105)
12. καν εἰςαμνογ ἱναξι- ἡπε αν ἱλαγ ἰπατηναγ (Ch. 107)
       {NB: ἱναξι- an negated future, 1st person sgl. (section 17.1) "I
          shall not taste"; ἰπατη- = ἰπατ-, circumstantial "not yet"
          form; "be (proper) time")
       {OBS. The 3rd sgl. masc. in ἰπατηναγ is the "impersonal"
          neuter, "it" in "it is time")

(b) Negatived:

1. οὐοι νητι ἐτετνουατηβικ ετεκνακία ἳ ἐτετχουα-
       τηκι εὐολ ἵπουςκ ων ἰπουκοι ἰπασεις οὐοι δε ὅν
       νητι ἐτεττουατωκ ἰ ἐτετκουαξει εὐολ ἰπουκυστηριον
       ετογαλα ἐτετηο νητ επαγ (III 45)
       {NB: ετογαλα relative present "which is holy"; ἐτετηο ο
          circumstantial present predicating a stative (section 16.1.1), "you
          being as ...")
2. εὐσαντίτ- ἔνες ἱχα- ἕντηβες ἱβι- ἑπερποσεχὲ εροου
       μεγχερο ὑγεχασα (III 170)
       {NB: ἑπερποσεχὲ determinated relative present "they that
          attend")
3. εὐσαντηπηνετ οὐσα μυρωμε ρω ἵωμι ἰμερινοβε ουτε ερ-
       σαντητυφψυχο λωσι ἱπτακεαρπια μερφατεκτι
       ἰμεσωπε μαφ οσαβε μαγαβ (IV 47f.)
4. εὕσπε εὐσαντηνετανοει σεναρςυμο εὐσυναγογη
       ἰνανειοτε (III 129)
       {NB: σεναρςυμο 3rd plural future "They will be estranged")
5. εὐσαντηνεινε γαρ εταγανη ἰπεχε ἴς ραχηπιον (RE 10 164)
       {NB: ραχηπιον 3rd sgl. masc. future "He will rebuke us" (pro-
          nomial of ἱπιο)}
7.4 THE CONJUNCTIVE (Table C(II)4):

\(\text{-}\) + pronominal actor + infinitive: \(\text{nēcwōtī}\)
\(\text{ntε}- + \) nominal/dem./indefinite/2nd sgl. fem. actor + infinitive:
\(\text{ntēpρwme cwōtī}\)

\(\text{Negated:}\) \(\text{nī- + pronominal actor + -tī- + infinitive: nō-τīcwōtī}\)
\(\text{ntε}-tī- + \) nominal/dem./indefinite/2nd sgl. fem. actor + infinitive:
\(\text{ntētī-πρwme cwōtī}\)

The conjunctive (here but briefly illustrated; see in detail below, sections 42-3) continues preceding verb clauses in a special close kind of coordination (“... and ...”) or disjunction (“... or ...”), with most of its verbal semantic features (time reference, mode, sometimes the affirmative: negative distinction) induced by the preceding verb. The conjunctive is also used as a verb-clause form after adverbs and conjunctions.

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
STERN parr. 441, 443, 445, 447; STEINDORFF parr. 366-371, 421; TILL parr. 321-325; VERGOTE parr. 161(1); LAMBIDIN parr. 25.2

1. (If the rich man sleeps) ωπρε-νκοοενε ei ncesyλα mοq nceseψεi nπεκρψιμα τηρψ (IV 25)
2. ογνωβε πε ογωμ-ποεικ ρνγρψευ nrc-τηρ-πεγψωβ (Ch. 104)
   [OBS. ωγωμ- construct state of the, infinitive, unmarked orthographically (in writing coinciding with the absolute form)]
3. δωμτ nηναγ ετεψυγκ (IV 200)
   {NB: δωμτ imperative}
4. εγεταιοι n ncesyννκ επζλλο (III 157)
5. ερωσογρψευ ει ερζαι εγωσευ η ογςηειε γω ncesερψη
erψςω nτειςε 2ητψ-τανψκη (then those who neglect to tend are to be blamed as unworthy of God’s mercy) (IV 99)
6. ογρψευ πεντα-πνουτε + naq nγωκπτ-ρψμαο nηρζεγγ
   παρχοντα γω ογεουγ γω nτε-τη-πνουτε + εσςγςια
   naq eγωυγ eβολ nηςετ (A II 363f.)
   {NB: ογρψευ πενταπνουτε + naq ... “There was a man to whom God had given...”, a narrative opening role of the Cleft Sentence (section 33): ογρψευ πε (“It is...”) + εντα- (relative perfect)}
7. (She abandoned herself to the Devil and the demons) ωπντογ-
   παλγε ημος δγω ncesyςαρ ερς (Ch. 121)
8. THE IMPERATIVE — the form of the verb used for commands, instructions and firm requests

Affirmative: the imperative is identical with the infinitive, except for (1) a number of special a- prefixed forms of certain verbs, e.g. ἀγοῦ “come”, ἀςικ “say (it)”, ἀναγ “see!”, ἀρι- “do (…)!”; (2) ο- prefixed imperatives for the causative lexemes, (e.g. ἁταμο “inform!”; for ταμο “to inform”; see Table 1).

Negative: ἄνιμ- prefixed to the infinitive: ἄνιμ- is the actual imperative, meaning “do not ...!”.

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
Stern parr. 384-385, 398; Steindorff parr. 287-292; Till parr. 297-300; Vergote parr. 160(1); Lanthin par. 17.1; Polotsky, “Modes” p. 76-9.

(a) Affirmative:

1. σχογ ἕρον πνε μνε σχογ ἕρον (A II 378)  
   [OBS. Note the (obligatory) definite article in addressed nouns (“vocative”)]

2. ἐτπεπαί ἡμερετε τωκ ἡγητ (III 179)  
   {NB: ἡμερετ plural of ἡμιτ}

3. ἵτο ἵτος πκώτη εβολ η ἄναιχωτει ἦμητ (A I 73)  
   [OBS. ἦ-τη: “dative” prepositional phrase modifying the imperative in a special reflexive mode-of-action (approx. “...away”)]

4. φίτογ φίτογ φί-νειάτνογετε κολαζε ἱμνοογ κολαζε ἱμνοογ γαλ-ενε (IV 7)

5. σωτη επινοβ ιπκιμα εγρει εχων (Ch. 17)

6. ταακ ναν επικε ἱπνεβετ επεκαλκαίμα (A II 320)  
   {NB: ταακ- pronominal of τακ; with the feminine object-suffix -c corresponding to the neutric “it”; here announcing the following ε- + infinitive}

7. ἱμνοογ βαρέζ εροογ ἱρωμε τίμνοογσογ ναν (III 24)  
   {NB: cog in τίμνοογσογ is the 3rd person plural of a special object pronoun, in most other persons identical in form with the suffix-pronouns: Table A5a1}

8. καακ τι-πεέτ τίμιεκλαξε κε-ίμνοογτ-των ει εβολ 
   γιτοοτη (IV 41)  
   {NB: καακ- pronominal of κω; κε-ίμνο- final clause (above, 6.4)}

9. βαρέζ περεπατε ιτη- των (P 131.5 1 ro)  
   {NB: -ιτη- negatives the infinitive}

10. κακ κελαχικτον τίμιαξε ιτεκταπρο ρζ γε κακ ι-
   ατνοει τιμητε ηνατιεε (IV 41)
11. εψχε-αἰφνοβε ερόκ ἡ αἰφνοβε εροὶ κω ἐβολ ἄηεν-ἐρνυ (P 134 44 115)

12. ἀμοῦ ἐβολ (Ch. 20) (NB: αμοῦ is the imperative corresponding to the infinitive εἰ)

13. ἄναγ ἐπρη (III 31) (NB: ἄναγ see αἰ)

14. ἄναγ γαρ ζῆνογαλ ετμιτεβίην ἦται (A II 298) (NB: divide ετ-μη-εβίηη)

15. ἀλοκ γα-νῇψε ἅπαντος (P 130.4 100 ῶο)

16. εψχαντογκ ἐςωβ νημ αρι-κογ γηουπτικς (IV 41)

17. αρι-α-πατοοτι ἐρ-ειρνη νήμαγ (P 130.4 100 νο)

18. αμοῦ γη-τεκαε-ειατ ἐβολ (III 142) (NB: πα- possessive pronoun)

19. ογ πετο ίαρυο πακ δεικ εροι (IV 38)

20. ματσαβον πνοεις επηκα λγω εκετ ναν ἰπηογα (IV 74)

21. αρι-αναί οηαντο ἐβολ γηψωψε ἅτηνοβε (IV 23) (NB: ἄη- conjunctive continuing the imperative)

22. μα-ταμοι ἅε-ογ πε πηγαβ νηετζὴαπηγ ετε-ντωκ αης τε (Or. 155)

23. εψχανπεκακαξε γκο μαφμοκ λγω εψχανειβε ματσογ (IV 127)

24. εψχανξογ λε οηητ εαεντ (Wess. 9 111)

25. μογτε ητο τπαρβενος ἴνοβ (A II 64)

(b) Negative:

1. ἰμηκρινε ιογρψιε Ἧρεψοβ (IV 41)

2. ἰμημισε ετεσιονις λ ογατ (P 131.5 1 νο)
3. Ἱππαλαπτεῖ ἰηογόγγχε Μαγατε (P 130.1 36 153)
   {NB: Μαγατε 2nd sgl. fem. of the reinforcer Μαγα-}
4. ἐτεβεῖα τσγα十四条 Ἱππα-πογινατε ζῖωωτε οὐδὲ Ἱππαταξρο ἐκω Ἕμιν Ἕμο (P 130.2 6 87)
   {NB: the addressee here is the 2nd person sgl. feminine (τσγα十四条)
   Note the special forms of the possessive article, prepositions, reinforcer and reflexive object of ταξρο (pronominal state of ταξρο and zero suffix "yourself")}
5. Ἱππα- Γοτε Ἕτωτι (III 88)
   {NB: Ἕτωτι: 2nd person plural of the reinforcer Ἕνοκ, Ἕτο-, similar in form to the personal pronoun}
6. καν Ἱππακριμή Ἱππακογικε (RE 10 160)
   {NB: καν "at least"}
7. Ἱππατ Ἕμιτο επεῖμα ἵηογογγεν ζαντιναγ εροκ ἤνογτε (III 146)
   {NB: ἦε - pronominal state of ειρε ("make [as, into]"); -τ suffix
   pronoun following a double vowel, the notation of a "disappeared"
   laryngal consonant (Table A 5a)}
8. Ἱππατε-άλλαγ ος (Ch. 56)
   [OBS. ττε-... ος (pronominal ττο-... ος) "make <someone>
   suffer loss" is the causative lexemic equivalent of ἦ-ος "suffer
   loss"]
9. THE CAUSATIVE CONJUGATION (Table D)

The causative conjugation consists of a set of forms conjugating the
infinitive for person (in this sense, like the tense base conjugation) with a
constant base -πε- which, in turn, is attached to prefixed forms of the
verb "give", "let, cause", as follows:

The prefixed infinitive of ἦ: τ-πε-: τπεκσωτι the CAUSATIVE
INFINITIVE "(to) make hear"; also supplying the infinitive with an
actor: "for him to hear", "that he hear" (negated τιπτεκσωτι) (9.1).

The imperative of ἦ: ἦ (negative Μπτ- (Μπτ-): the CAUSATIVE
IMPERATIVE or JUSSIVE "make/let him hear!", "let him hear!" Μπεκ-
σωτι / Μπτπτεκσωτι (10)

A special grammaticalized first-person sgl. conjugated form of ἦ:
ταπεκσωτι the CONSEQUENTIAL CAUSATIVE CONJUNCTIVE, "(Do this,)
and (you may be sure that) ...".
NB: the 1st sgl. form of τρε- is τρα.

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
POLOTSKY, "Modes"; *POLOTSKY, Kausativer Infinitiv

9.1 THE CAUSATIVE INFINITIVE (Table D1): τρετεω / τρεπρωμε εσωμι
(1st sgl. τρασωμι, 2nd sgl. fem. τρεσωμι; also nominal/dem./indef./interr. actor)

(a) In conjugation, occupying the usual infinitive position: "make/let him hear"
(b) After the preposition ε-: "that he hear"; neg. ετητρε-
(c) After other prepositions: ἀνπτρε-, μηντε-, αντητε-, ηντε-, ξωριτε-, ἀνπτρετεωμει "in (the event of) his hearing"

μηντετεωμει "after (the event of) his hearing"
ἀντητεωμει "instead of his hearing"
ηντεωμει "except that he hear"
ξωριτεωμει "without his hearing"
ητεωμει "of his hearing"

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
STERN parr. 461-463; STEINDORFF parr. 383-387, 452; TILL parr. 335-342, 351;
VERGOTE parr. 161(5), 204, 206-207; LAMBIDIN parr. 20.1, 30.4; *POLOTSKY, Kausativer Infinitiv parr. 7, 10-21, 22-30

(a) In conjugation:

1. άσητεωσωμεν τηρον ηηνε ηνπακα (IV 36)
   [OBS. The two coordinated nouns stand in apposition to the 3rd plural pronoun in τρεγ-; nominal apposition to 3rd-person pronominal actor expressions in tense forms and τρε- after prepositions would be normally introduced by ηδη-]

2. άσητεωσωμεν (III 90) έοισε (ο εοισε) "J.
   [NB: -οισε, for the object suffix alternant of έοισε after final η]

3. άσητεωσωμεν ηηνε χερετε ρηνοσε 2ω (A 1 79)
   [NB: 2ω 1st sgl. of the reinforcer (augens) 2ωωη]

4. άσητε-παι 2ωωη παραξα (A 1 118)

5. άσητεωση-ροοωυ ενερβηση ηνπακα (P 130.2 96 152)

6. ήπηστετεωσωμεν ρηνοσε παραποσωμου (Ch. 74)
THE FORMAL-FUNCTIONAL SYSTEM

7. κατα τατρε-νες την ἡγούμενη ηγούμενη (III 166)
   (NB: κατα imperative with 1st person sgl. pron. object, see κατα “let”; τα- 1st sgl. conjunctive, following-up the imperative and expressing its object action)

8. μητρεσως σωτηρ αυτω μητρεσως μοσα (Wccs. 9 142)

9. ηττεύνομαι μητηκεσως μητηκεσως εσογει ενογειερο μητηκεσ (Ch. 39)

10. ηττευνοσφοι μητητεβονε τηρο (Ch. 160)

(b) After the preposition ε-: εττευνοσφοι, εττευνοσφοι

1. μητητεμαη εττευνοσφοι μητητεμαη μητητεμαη (III 34)
2. ουτεδον επε τητευνοσφοι ηττεσονε μητητεσομ επενοε (Ch. 76)
   (NB: μ... μ...: “make...into”)

3. αγοττοικ ην εττευνοσφοι ηπερη μητητεσο (IV 28)
   [OBS. The neutric feminine -e ("it") anticipates "that" (εττευνοσφοι); so too in texts 5, 10, 15, originally also 6]

4. ατευνοη δε ωσηε εττευνοσφοι ηεπεηενα (Lcyd. 295 = Rom. 13:11)

5. μητηθαγουλ επε τητευνοσφοι ηεπεηενα (III 191)
6. ησ εροη επε τητευνοσφοι ηεπεηενα ηεπεηενα (III 35)
   (NB: ησε “it behaves”, “it is fitting” (originally present form with a neutric feminine actor: “it goes”)

7. ακτο ηπερηηρη επηηρο σο εττευνοσφοι ηεπεηενα (IV 206)

8. τηοκεμεκ ηνοι εεσ-ηνοσφοι εττευνοσφοι ηνοι- ωαξε εωω τατηηηςηο ηνοτ (IV 172)
   (NB: τηοκεμεκ: present, 1st sgl. “I am (have been) reflecting”;
   εεσ- “for” (with duration of time), see section 14)

9. πκαιρος επε εττευνοηεωτη ην ουμαξαρ ωσηε ηνοι ηπερηηηρη εροη ενεγησορ αυω νεγησε (III 74)

10. μανογε αε αν εττευνο ωωρη ηεπεηενε (A II 258)
    (NB: μανογε “it is good”, Adjective Verb (section 22.1))

11. τηοκ τηωη πενηηντη τηωη εηωητη εττευνοσφοι ηεπεηα (III 99f.)
    (NB: τηωη present form, “we enjoin”; τηωη governs the preposition εττη- / εηωητη)

12. αμισε ενε-μηπαεςηε ην εττευνο- ωοειε εροη (IV 5)
13. ἀναγ ἔμ-Ζῆς ἡμᾶς ζηνεργαφῆ εὐγνω ἐτοοτῇ ετῆ-
τρεπου ἀλλαν ἁναγ (III 182)
14. τῶν ἄνδρων ὑπεοοῦ ἢ ετητρεκῆς ἵνα ὑποπονήσουν ἐξ-
νεκεί έρας ετοοτῇ ἠπλάς ἦνητακρ ὑπογκακα ἡνα-
ζραγ (III 106f.)
(ΝΒ: ηνετα- determined relative perfect ("they who...", predi-
cating ἔ- as η “be(comes) as”)
15. ζηνεσωμε έτθράπωε ἱπεντό ἐβολ ἄνδρω (IV 91)
16. ζηνεσωμε ένωμε ετητρεγτιμο (IV 92)
(c) ζηνπρετετρευσωμε, ζηνσατρετευσωμε; other prepositions with τρε-
τρευσωμε as a “that” form:
1 ζηνπρετετρευσωμε ηνί-πρη χαγςωμε ευογη ηνι-πρηνπο
ζηνπρετετρευσωμε ηνί-πρην πνταϊκαογυγην άναλαμο
αγω ευογη (IV 176f.)
2. άναιν ηνιογονο ἡνα αγω ανσμογ έρον ηνιογονο ἄσσογ
ζηνπρετετρευσωμε ηνετίδας έρας ευογη ευογηνηβρα ἄσ
ωγον άναγ (IV 206)
3. πειςωμε ἀναιν ερο γενπρασασγ άπασωσο (III 38)
(ΝΒ: παπασωσο definite nominalized relative present (section
31.1.1); “the One who is exalted”)
4. ζηνπρετετεχαρις δε έογε-αγκ ἐβολ αγκονο αγκοις
αγκονο αγκονο αγκονο αγκονο αγκονο αγκονο (Ch. 148)
(ΝΒ: έογε- inside the conjugation form, preceding and modifying
the infinitives: “rather”)
[ΟΒΣ. Note the use of the auxiliary ἔ- (construct of εἰπε) with
nouns in the sense of “become”]
5. αιεσωμον ην- λογος ζηνσωμε ένογ νεποεινι
ζηνπρετετρευσωμε ένογ νεποεινι άγω ζηνπρετετρευσωμε
(IV 139)
(ΝΒ: άγω- ην “find to be…”)
6. άιιαντας ζομολογει άπεξζηνπρετετρευσωμε άιιτου
ζηνσωμε-σογ έτασε-εοις ένογ νεποειν άιιοι
ζηνπρετετρευσωμε άιιτου άινπιάλωλος (Ch. 66)
7. άπεξζηνπραμον άιισωμε άαγ άαματρετευσαραταί (III 148)
(ΝΒ: παραταί = παραταί (and often, 1 = εἰ in words of Greek
origin: a phenomenon of Hellenistic Greek orthography and phono-
logy)
8. ζηνσατραει ἐβολ.zητοοτου άπενκαλλαγ άπεθοοου ε-
σωμε άγοοο (III 88)
9. ηενεγαγωρεβα ηυεκτερεγη-αναθυ ηακ ηε-ηπενηψοβε αειερε ηο (III 17)
   [OBS. εηερε (with no or zero object) resumes the derived verb η-αναθυ]
10. ηενεγαγερεκα-βολ ηηοου εγηακ ακ ηυεκτερεκομκογ (Ch. 27)
    [NB: εγηακ ακ "you not willing", "against your will" (section 24.1)]
11. οεκαεθκηε ζημ ηυηζρη ηεκηρινκ ηυεκτερεγηη υπεψαλνήριον υπεψεγαγελιον ζηογηζζοο ηυζα (III 111)
    [NB: καεκκηε = καενκηε, ηεκηρινκ = κηρινκ (see note to text 7)]
12. ηηα εηεηαγηθκ εελα ηυεκτερεγηθκ εβολ ηεηεγναγημη ηηοεοε (III 126)
13. ηεζθοο εηε ηεηεγαγαγε (Ch. 178)
14. ακηεγεηευηηοεοε εβολ ηεηθογ ηαη-ηεηζζο ηηοο ηηζγιεγε εηεοηαη ηεηθειηθε (IV 4)
15. ακηεγεηθ-οεηεζ εελ-ηεηθαιο ηπιηθηε ηεηεψεκςες ηηζγθο ηηηκηε-εεοο ηακ ακηεεςαι ηοεηεζ εειηπηθηκ ηεηεθοκκζεο (Wess. 9 118)
    [NB: the conjunctive (ηηηκηε-εεοο) continues -ηερε-]
16. ηεκκθν ακ ηε εηεη ηεηγ ηηηκ ακεκαθκκ εεηε-ηεηζθηε μεηε-οεεζ ηοεοε ηεηρθηζη ηεηζρηηζη ηεηεηζ ηεηζρηηζη ηεηζρηηζη ηεηζρηηζη (Ch. 35)
17. ειεηει-ογ ηεηζκκηκκη ηεκηεηηεη-ξεη κεκςε ηηζκκ (A 1 267)
    [NB: ειεηει-ογ "What is it that I want?", Second Present with an interrogative object as focus (section 36)]
18. ηηα ακ ηεηκερεζε μεηωε ηεκ τεηκηεκ-τεηκαζε εεηεηε ηεηεηθηκ ηεηεηθηκ ηεηεηθηκ ηεηεηθηκ (A 1 3)
    [OBS. A negative copular Nominal Sentence (section 3.3), with ("the place to...", lit. "the place that one should...") as theme and τεηκε... as rheme (predicate)]
19. λακηεκερεζε ηο ηεηκς ηεηω (A 1 52)
    [NB: λακηεκ: Adjective Verb: "It is better (that ...)"

10 THE CAUSATIVE IMPERATIVE or JUSSIVE (Table D2):

3rd persons: ηαρεκςκωττ / ηαρεκπρηκε κεκ, neg. ηηηκερε- 
ηαρεκςκωττ / ηηηκερεκπρηκε κεκ "Let him/the man (not) hear!"
1st person plural: ἡμᾶς, neg. μὴ ἠρθεῖτε ὑμῖν. “Let us (not) hear!”
(Rarely also in the 1st singular, with the semantic component of causation more pronounced; also with nominal/dem./indefinite actor)

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
STERN parr. 383, 389; TILL parr. 346 (neg.); LAMBDIN parr. 30.1; POLOTSKY, “Modes” p. 81-84; *KAUSATIVER INFINITIV parr. 8, 31-36

(a) Affirmative:
1. ἥμερος ὑπηρέτευ (P 130.2 24 555)
2. ἡμερήστρα ὑπετίθηκα (P 130.2 100 γᾭ)
3. ἦ ἡμῶν δε ἦ αὐτού κατοικοῦμεν (Ch. 125)
4. ἡμοῦ παί οὐ-πρεπε-περαι-πασώ ὠνομᾶ (Wess. 9 143)
5. ἠτέπει οὐ-προποιὴ ποιά ὑμῶν βοηθεὶ κραοὶ (RE 11 16)
6. ἡμοῦ λογίσμῳ ἡμᾶς ἦμερη ὑπερεπανοῦ (P 130.4 110 552)
   [OBS. ἡμοῦ + infinitive followed by a conjunction form predicating the same verb is the Droptic version of the so-called "absolute" or "tautological" infinitive, used to reinforce the verbal notion ("he will hear indeed")]
7. ἡμᾶς ἐπηρεάσεται ἄγνωστός ῃ ἐνὶ ἤμερες ἴνα ἐκπλήξομαι ἔτη ἐτυπήν & ἀγνώ ἔδο πληκτός ἔναλ ᶑ ἔνα διά ἰ ἐνπάπ αὐτοῦ ὁ ἀμῶν (IV 34)
8. ἰ ἀν ὑπηρέτευ ὀ παν ἡμῶν ἡμᾶς ἄγνωστος ἔτη ἐκάκε ἐνεκοῦστα ὑπερεπανοῦ ὁ ἀμῶν (P 130.5 550 22)
9. ἥμερησεσθος καὶ ἔκακος ἐκπλήξομαι ἄγνω ἴνα ἐκπλήξομαι ἦμερη ἴναι μᾶς ὁ ἐποδοκοῦ ἦμερησθος (Ch. 37)
10. ἡμῶν βοηθεὶ ὑπηρέτευ (A 1 100)

(b) Negative:
1. μὴ ἐν ἡμῶν (P 130.2 60 72) — ἦ ἡμῶν (A 1 [2])
2. μὴ ἡμᾶς ἐπηρεάσῃ ἐκατον βοηθεὶ (P 130.2 1 78)
3. μὴ ἡμῶν ἐμποτεῖ ὁ ἀτοκ πασί (A 1 73)
4. μὴ ἡμῶν ὀποιοῦ (A 1 213)
5. μὴ ἡμᾶς ἐπηρεάσῃ ἐκατον ἐπαι (Wess. 9 148)
6. μὴ ἡμῶν ἐπηρεάσῃ ὁ ἡμῶν (P 131.6 44 115)
7. μὴ ἡμῶν ἐπηρεάσῃ ἐπαι ἐκατον ἐπαι ὁ ἡμῶν (IV 24)
   {NB: ἐπαι adversative particle}
8. μὴ ἡμῶν ἐπαι ἐπαι ἐπαι ἐπαι ἐπαι ὁ ἡμῶν (A 1 166)
THE FORMAL-FUNCTIONAL SYSTEM

II THE CONSEQUENTIAL CAUSATIVE CONJUNCTIVE (ταρεψ-εωτι, Table D3):

2nd & 3rd persons: ταρεψεωτι / ταρεψεωτι / ταρεψεωτι εωτι "(Do this,) and (I promise you that ...)". Also nominal/ demonstr./indefinite actor.

1st person plural: ταρεψεωτι "... and then we shall ...

Also as the logical sequel to a rhetorical question.

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
Stern par. 453; Steindorff parr. 352-354; Till par. 311; Vergeot par. 161(2); PoIotsky, "Modes" p. 87-89; * Kausativer Infinitiv parr. 9, 31, 37-40, 45

1. na ταρογνα νακ ψηντικ ταρογνεστθυ γαροκ κω εβαλ ταρογκω νακ εβαλ (P 131.6 43 ro)
   (NB: ψην = ψην- (see ψηνε))
2. ναταιε-πνουτε ταρηκβιδοι (III 112)
3. σει νητι ιζεπζεγανθ ικωζ ισεωφ ... ταρετζειοι ον ιηρωκκζ νηρκωζετ ετεμεωφυ (A II 224f.)
4. γαρε πεμετβαλξντ νιε ετενζ ταρετζειανε επεοουτιν (Cl. Pr. 22 364)
5. ψηντικ δε γαρεκλαος ικοοεοκ εβαλ ... ταρογζρθε εειμε χε-μη-δενουτε υβαλακ (Ch. 48)
   (NB: ικοοεοκ = κοοεοκ (see ικωτε); statement of non-existence, "there is not!", section 12.2)
6. μαρεπροεξε εμεχθαξε ταρνειμε επετζιςει ιςεωφ (Cat. 41)
   (NB: επετζιςει ιςεωφ determined relative present "that which you seek", ιςεωφ = being the preposition governed by ψηνε)
7. εγητων πογωσι ραρεπισω ειτι ιςεωφ (A II 510)
   (NB: εγητων Second Present, putting in focus the interrogative adverbial predicate των "where?" (section 37): "Where is he?")
8. αμογ ετεκκλησα ταρεπνουτε εμογ ερόκ ιζεκνιετρημαιο (P 131.6 13 ro)
9. κα-νογ εβαλ ερππου γιονμανε ταρεπτ-των βωκ εβαλ ιςεωφ (A I 63f.)
   (NB: ερππου adnominal circumstantial present: "that is evil")
UNIT (III): PRESENTATIVE and EXISTENTIAL CLAUSES  
(sections 12-14)

12.1 Affirmation of existence: oγñ- "There exists"
12.1.1 Conversions

12.2 Negation of existence: (ṁ)mñ- "There does not exist".
12.2.1 Conversions

13.1 Affirmation of existential possession: the verboid oγñta- q "(He) has"
13.1.1 Conversions

13.2 Negation of existential possession: the verboid (ṁ)mñta- q "(He) does not have"
13.2.1 Conversions

14 Presentative (deictic existence) clauses: ε1ε (2hntε) "Here is..."
Prepositional ε1ε (with expression of time): "It has been ... since ...".

12 EXISTENTIAL STATEMENTS, EXISTENTIAL POSSESSION  
(see Table E),
ογñ- "there is/exists...", affirmation of existence (12.1)
(ṁ)mñ- "There is not/does not exist..." (12.2)

The existants (non-existants, as the case may be) are never definite; however, the determinated ("definite") relative (31.1) does occur after ογñ- or (ṁ)mñ-, in a generic (non-specific) sense (ογñ-πετ- "there is such a one as ...").

The fusion of ογñ-/ (ṁ)mñ- and the preposition ητε-, ητά- "with, "by" forms the Coptic expression for predicative possession ("have/ have not"), i.e. the verboid oγñta- (ṁ)mñta- (13)

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
Stern parr. 317, 368; Steindorff parr. 296, 397-402; Tili. parr. 287-296;
Vergote par. 170(7-8); Lambdin par. 2.2, Polotsky, "Conjugation System", parr. 33-35; Shisha-Halevy, "Existential Statements"
12.1 AFFIRMATION OF EXISTENCE, οὐγίν- "There exists", "There is" (Table E1)

NB: οὐγίν-... ἢ/ἡμαί predicates intimate ("inalienable") possession

1. οὐγίκεκοσμος ἡπαλ ηπαλ (Orig. 303)
2. ἦν οὐγίνε- ἤρρο ἡκα- ἤ-ρμε έβολ ηγέτοργ ηγην... ἦν ἱνβεθετ- ἐρο ἡκα- ἤ-ρρο ἡπαλ ἦνα- ἐκες (A I 165)
   (NB: έτην relative present: "that is coming"); ἦνετορ is the abstract noun derived from the concrete ἤρρο)
3. οὐγίνοων εροογ ἤτοοτά ἡπαλοεις ἡπαλ (P 130.5 15 ὅρο)
   [OBS. The preposition ε- denotes the debtor, ἤτοοτ- the creditor]
4. οὐγίδον ἡμοκ εἰειμε ἥε- ἠλον ἡπαλογίτ- την ἡμ- πκαζ
   νε-ογ πετσοον (Orig. 814)
   (NB: ἡμοο πετσοον preterite conversion of the Cleft Sentence
   (section 33.3): "What was it that existed?")
5. οὐγίδον ετρέψυκιν ἰνοει ἄχι- εψανα ἦε εψανα ἄχι- ψψυκ (Orig. 335)
   (NB: έε = η; a rhetorical question)
6. οὐγίδαλοιμων εφπητ ἡκαδαλοιμων ἅγα ρψεμε ἡπονροος
   εφπητ ἡκαρφεμε ἡπονροος (A II 16)
   (NB: εφπητ adnominal circumstantial present, qualifying the zero-
   article nouns: "running after", "pursuing")
7. εὐχε- οὐγίζονε ἦγητεντην εἰκεί ἠμοοο ἡδονεν ἡμογιτα-
   μοι ἥε- εἰειειμε (III 139)
   (NB: εἰκεί ἠμοοο ἡδονεν adnominal circumstantial present, qualifi-
   ying "whom I am wronging")
8. οὐγίζεινε εῳραπενεςζηι ζυποπτενε ερος ἥε- οὐγίοεικ
   (Or. 159)
9. ἤντωτην ἰε οὐγίκαζ οὐγίδων οὐγίζοοον οὐγίδει οὐγί-
   γυ-παρχοντα οὐγίαξο ἦν ἰε νογιαξ άγα οὐγίδον ἤμωτη
   εϊ-πογας ἰπνογε ζηπεθνογεςραςηε ἦματε (Ch. 100)
   [OBS. Note the conjunction-less coordination of several clauses in
   an "enumerative style"]

12.1.1 οὐγί- CONVERTED (Tables E1, G):

(a) Circumstantial εοὐγί- εγί- "there existing ..." (also adnominal; 27-30)
(b) Relative ετεογί- "(...) whom there exists ..." (31-33)
(c) Second Tense εοὐγί- (very rare; 34-38)
(d) Preterite νεογυ- "there existed", also in hypothetical (remote) condition (39-41)

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
Stern parr. 412, 414; Steindorff parr. 374, 377, 468; Till parr. 462, 468; Lambdin par. 25.1(c); Polotsky, "Conjugation System", parr. 33-35, *Nom. Transposition* parr. 34-37

(a) Circumstantial:
1. ἦμενκερῳβ γαρ ἄγω κεφαλὲ εὐγνομα ετρεπῆνε εὐτίρ εποογ ... (Orig. 360)
   {NB: ἦμεν--; see section 12.2}
2. ἦμπ- εὐα- τητήν ενετυγμεν ἡνηττητήν θάλασσα ἦνῳβ εὐγνομα ἡμωτήν ἐαγ ναγ (E 81)
   {NB: ενετυγμεν determined relative present "they that are ill"}

(b) Relative:
1. υνετυγμενε ετεογυ- καλ ἡμοογ (Mun. 107)
2. υνετεογυμομ ἡμοι ερῳβ νιμ (E 88)

(c) Second Tense:
1. ἀρα εὐγνητῆν2 ἡμνουτε ππαντοκρατωρ (Ch. 186)
   {NB: the Second Tense marks the rhetorical question as such, or stresses the existant γεντῆς, or both (see sections 36. 38)}

(d) Preterite:
1. ενεγνομα γαρ ἡμοι ἄγω ενε- τβονεια αν τε μπεξε (you would not have remained silent) (Ch. 36)
2. νεογυμονομ γαρ ἡμινῳε μαγ πε (Ch. 133)
   {NB: πε occurs often with the preterite conversion: its function is not entirely clear, but it seems to mark the whole clause as background)

12.2 NEGATION OF EXISTENCE: ἦμεν-, μη- "There does not exist", "There is not" (Table E1)

NB: (Μ)μη- ... η-/μιον- negates intimate ("inalienable") possession
1. μηνυφος ἦνῳο εποογ (IV 2)
   {NB: the preposition ε- used to express comparison ("more than")
2. θάλασσα γαρ ἡσουτ τεπρονοια μπονοτε (IV 199)
3. ἰμίςαξοῦ ὴπόλο ἤτεραγρὴ ἵ- ἦπης εἰ ἐξαὶ ἐξωylation IV 10
   [OBS. ἵ- introduces a relative (rather adnominal) negative clause qualifying the existant of ἰμίς- (or in implied non-existence)]
4. ἰμῖκεψε ἀργ ἰμίς κεῖνα ἐπὶ ἱδίον ἐτερφώς ἐσιλη ιπροθή ἑνθεο ἱμιοῦ Ἰ ἤτ- καρπος ἰσθήτου (Orig. 360)
5. ἰμῖςαξοῦ ἰσθήτου ἱπροθή ἱροθ (III 133)
6. ἦπης- ὴπόλο ἤτεραγρὴ ἐβονθεὶ ἐπερψαὶ ἐτε- ὴγ ἱμίς ἵ-παλαι ἱπονθεὶ ἐτερψιμε (Or. 157)
7. ἰμ邻里 ἵμε ἰδακίαζο ἰἐνα άγα ἱκσοῦ ἱνούτῃ ἰμέπηκας (Ch. 96)
8. ἰμῖςαξοῦ ἵμπτκας ἰμῖπειρας ἱρώμε ἰμῖδοικι- ἱμε ἱνοκ (Ch. 13)
9. ὁγκογ- ὣ ἰμἱκιβε ἱνοσ (Ch. 148)
10. ἰμῖςαξοῦ ἰἱ- ὑψι ἰμίς ἱμίψυχε ἱἱ- ἱρώμε (Orig. 340)
11. ἰτοκ ὑ ἱτοκ ὣ ἰμίκενογ- ἱνεᾶ ἱναλακ (A I 211)
   [OBS. ἱτοκ ὑ ἱτοκ ὑ ἱτοκ ὑ Nominal Sentence predicating immutability or Divine Existence]

12.2.1 (ἵ)μῖ- CONVIRTED (Tables E1, G):

(a) Circumstantial ἵμι-, ἵμι-, ἰμῖ- “there not existing…” (also adnominal; 27-30)
(b) Relative ἐτε(ἵ)μῖ “(…) whom there does not exist…” (31-33)
(c) Second Tense ἐ(ἵ)μῖ- Scripture coptic ἐτε(ἵ)μῖ- (rare; 34-38)
(d) Preterite ἑ(ἵ)μῖ- “there used not to exist”, also in hypothetical (remote) condition (39-41)

(a) Circumstantial:
1. (They say there are twelve gospels,) ἵμιογον ἱκα- ὁτού ὲπα- 
   θαμεθαῖος ὲπαθαρκὸς ὲπαλογκας ὲπασαιως 
   ὲνς (Orig. 425)
2. ὑμηκε ἵμιταβρο ἱστή (A II 416)
3. ὲπατατηπρε ὡψε ἱμιοῦ (Ch. 149)
   (NB: πεντατηπρε- determined relative perfect: “He who caus-
   ed…”)

(b) Relative:
1. ὲπαρος ὲτεμῖκῳ ὴπολ ἱστή (A I 212)
2. ἱστεμῖπατ ἱμιοῦ (III 143)
3. Νάσαμκε Ναμ ... ΕΤΕΜΝΗΔΑΥΟΥ ΝΠΑΛ ΝΤΕΓΡΑΦΗ ΧΕ-
ΜΠΙΓΕΙ ΕΓΡΑΙ ΕΧΩΥΟΥ (IV 10)
[OBS. Adnominal χε-, see OBS. on 12.2, text (3)]

(c) Second Tense:
1. ΜΝΚΑΤΡΕΥΣΟΥΝ-ΠΣΟΟΥΝ ΤΗΡΙΑ ΔΥΙ ΕΜΝΚΕΝΟΥΤΕ ΝΚΑ-ΤΙ (K 9316)
   {NB: this is probably the Second Tense as a "that" clause}
2. (NOT SHENOUTE) ΜΗ ΕΤΕΜΝΘΟΜ ΝΜΟΙ ΕΤΟΥΧΕ-ﺚΥΤΙ (Jes.
   50:2)
   {NB: the Second Tense marking a rhetorical question}

(d) Preterite:
1. ΝΕΜΝ-ΠΕΤΚΙΤΕ ΝΚΥΥ ΠΕ (A I 459)
   {NB: ΠΕ- "one who ...", det. relative present}

13 THE EXISTENTIAL-POSSESSION VERBOLD (Table E2):
Affirmative ογντα-: "(He) has ..." ("There is + with him")
Negative (Μ)ΜΝΤΑ- "(He) does not have ..." ("There is not + with
him")

The possession verbold is combined with the POSSESSOR (nominal/pron-
nominal) and POSSESSED (nominal/pronominal) in the following main
constructions:

NOMINAL POSSESSED
(a) ογντα- (PRON. POSSESSOR)/ ογντε- (NOM. POSSESSOR) + POSSESSED
   (+ ΜΜΑΓ "there")
(b) ογντα- (PRON. POSSESSOR)/ ογντε- (NOM. POSSESSOR) (+ ΜΜΑΓ)
   + Ν- POSSESSED

PRONOMINAL POSSESSED
(c) ογντα- + POSSESSOR + POSSESSED (possessor: suffix pronouns;
possessed: objective pronouns, see Table A5a/a1)

Construction (a) is normal for a zero-determined possessed and
possible with other determinators; all constructions are used for
ογιτα- and (Μ)ΜΝΤΑ-.

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
STERN parr. 312-316; STEINDORFF parr. 397-403; TILL parr. 289-295; VERGOTE
parr. 170(8); LAMBDIN parr. 22.1; POLOTSKY, "Conjugation-System" parr. 33-35;
* Nom. Transposition parr. 41-46
13.1 AFFIRMATION OF EXISTENTIAL POSSESSION: οὐ̂ντάρ "(He) has" (Table E2)

1. οὐ̂νταρ -2αρ ἔχοντα ἔχει (IV 25)
2. οὐ̂νταρ ἔχει ονόμα καθεκε δατι-ποντε (P 130.2 102 22)
3. οὐ̂νταρ-τε θεία (Ch. 120).
4. οὐ̂νταρ-τεογεία έκωνε η θείκωνε (IV 13)
5. προ οὐ̂ντα-τεοκατογ εκεί (Ch. 28)
6. ἥ οὐ̂ντα-πεκειστ χρονος λαμιρ ρω ἔτοι πιαπενοκ (Ch. 42)
7. ταπυρν οὐ̂ντα-2αρ ἔςαθον ἔχει (III 111 = Lc. 12:19)
   {NB: second sgl. fem. possessor}

13.1.1 οὐ̂νταρ CONVERTED (Tables E2, G):

(a) Circumstantial ενούνταρ, ενούνταρ "(he) having ..." (also adnominal; 27-30)
(b) Relative έτεογούνταρ "who has ...", "whom (he) has ...") (31-33)
(c) Second Tense ε(ο)γούνταρ "(It is ...) that (he) has ..." (34-38)
   Negativled ενούνταρ ... an "(He) had, used to have ...", also in hypothehtical (remote) condition (39-41)

NB: resumption of the antecedent (in the case of relative conversion: "...which (he) has ...") is by means of the objective pronouns (Table A5a_1)

BIBLIOGRAPHY:

STERN parr. 412, 414; STEINDORFF parr. 402, 468; LAMBDOG par. 25.1(c); Polyotksy, "Conjugation System" parr. 33-35; * Nom. Transposition parr. 47-50

(a) Circumstantial:

1. γανωνε ενούνιαν ερωμε Πγαιο εουνταρ ερον (Miss. 278)
   {NB: γανωνε Adjective Verb (section 22.1) with a neutric feminine actor "it is good")
2. γενρωμε ενούνιαν ερωμε (P 130.4 157 ro)
3. ἡπρωμε ενούνιαν-2αρ ἐκαίμε (A 11 61)
   [OBS. γενρωμε + circumstantial is here used to supply a (negative) imperative for the possessive verboid]

(b) Relative:

1. ογον κιν έτεογούνταρ ἔχει ητείγικον (Ch. 86)
2. έτεογούνταρ-ρωμε έχει (P 130.2 62 76)
3. πετευγίτας ἥμας ἡρεψει επικακτηριόν (III 89)
4. τεγαγαπί ζετευγίτας εἴροιν επνούτε (IV 52)
5. πετευγίτας έγγο (Or. 161)
   {NB: -έγγο is here the objective pronoun (Table A, a;); similarly
   -ς in the next text
6. οὔς-ως οὔγως τετευγίτας (Ch. 99)
   {NB: this is a Cleft Sentence (section 33), with the possessed put in
   focus and resumed by the objective pronoun -ς: "It is a ... that I
   have")
7. πετευγίτας ἥμας ἴτεσονοις εἴρνας παρ εὐγίτας
   ἐς ἡνηθέ (Ch. 86)
   {NB: The relative conversion is here carried on by the circumstan-
   tial (section 29.1))

(c) Second Tense:
1. εὐχε-οὐγίτας-πιτίκ ἥμας εἰε εὐγίτας ἥμας ἰππώθικ
   ἡπικάκτηριον (Cat. 43)
   {NB: the direct object is emphasized (put into focus) by the Second
   Tense)
2. εὐχε-οὐγίτας-οῦδομ γαρ εἰ εὐγίτας-κα-μα νας
   ἰηντόυ (III 85)
   {NB: ἰ- is here put into focus by the Second Tense}

(d) Preterite:
1. παείωτ ὁ-εοογ χαὶ ἰππεοογ ενεογίτας-κα-μα-τεκχος ψωπε (Cat. 42 = Joh. 17:5)
   {NB: ὁ-εοογ imperative; ενεογίτας- relative preterite (double
   conversion)}
2. ενεογίτας-ζελπις γαρ ἥμας ἰτεπχαγαγος ἰπποεις
   ψεγνακις αν ἐπε εςολ ἱτουτθ (Wess. 9 162)
   {NB: ενε- circumstantial preterite (double conversion), expressing
   the supposition constituent of a remote hypothetical condition
   ("irrealis"); ψεγνα- preterite future, used for remote hypothetical
   result ("they would not have gone", see section 41)

13.2 NEGATION OF EXISTENTIAL POSESSION: THE VERBOID
(asename "(He) does not have..." (Table E2)
For construction and Bibliography, see 13.1
1. εὐχε-μήτας-πιτίκ ἥμας εἰε-μήτας-ζελπις ἥμας
   (Cat. 43)
2. μήτηδοιν ἵμαυ παλαίμονιον ἴσατακο (III 78)
   (NB: παλαίμονιον address ("vocative"))
3. μήταν-λοιπε μήταν-λῳκε εχὶ ἠπεζοοοῦ ἤπατ (Ch. 120)
4. μήταγ ἵμαυ ἴπτοτε ἴπμεξ (P 130.2 25 327)
5. εὐχαεοῦτακεχεχεὶ ἱονοῦκοεἰς ἀλλα τενού μήτακ
   (Ch. 31)
6. μήτε-πεισονε υἱὸ ἵμαυ (IV 21)
7. μήτε-ἀδικασθριον ῥαξε ἵμαυ εχὶ ερον (Ch. 95)
8. αὐθον ἰμερατε μήταν-ἀξεπαὶς ἵμαυ ἱκανερῆ πει
   μῆτε ἐπηοντε ἱαγαὶ ἱπποξοεἰς ἱκ (III 136)
9. μήται-νοπτε εξογν ἐρον (A 1 71)
10. μήτατ-οεικ εοοϑη (Ch. 47)

13.2.1 (Ε)μήτα- CONVERTED (Tables E2, G)

(a) Circumstantial εμήτα-, εμήτα-, μήτα- "(He) not
    having..." (also adnominal; 27-30)
(b) Relative ετε(Ε)μήτα- "who does not have", "whom
    (he) does not have" (31-33)
(d) Preterite νεμήτα- "(He) did not have...", also in
    hypothetical (remote) condition (34-38)

For Bibliography, see 13.2.1

(a) Circumstantial:
1. γενηθηγε ἱοτε εμήτογο-νπε (E 94)
2. εμήτετςευκαγωγη ἱνιογαῖ ἱαοεὶς ἵκ ἵμαυ ἱμήτογ-
   λαγα ἱςαγ (III 57)
3. γενυμινο εμήτογο-ρφιε ἵμαυ 2ρα1 ἱςητή (P 130.2 62 76)

(b) Relative:
1. πνούτε ετεμηνη-φονος (P 130.2 101 10)
2. νεσιογρ ετεμήτογ-ἐνπρε ἵμαγ ἴπετακα (IV 31)
3. πετεμήτακ-πνυρε μήτακ-πειστ εμήτακ-πειστ αε μή-
   τακ-νούτε ἱςαγ (A II 384)
   {NB: πετεμήτακ- determinated relative: "he who..."; so too in
   text 4)
4. πετεογηη-χοειτε χιτε μαρεφ-ογει ἱπτεμήτακ αγ
   πετεογηη-ογοεικ μαρεχείρε ἰν γιναι (Ch. 55, cf. Lc.
   3:11)
(c) Preterite:
1. nēmītaq ē† (III 78)

14 PRESENTATIVE (DEICTIC-EXISTENTIAL) CLAUSES: eīc-, eīc-γίνετε "Here is…"

(a) # eīc- + noun syntagm (+ adverb/circumstantial/relative) #, # eīc-γίνετε (rarely eīc-) + clause #
(b) # eīc- + expression of time: "prepositional" eīc, "for" (with the present tense in the 1st person in Coptic, corresponding to the Present Perfect Progressive in English, "have been…-ing"

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
STERN par. 529; STEINHORF par. 214-215; TILL par. 387; VERGOTE par. 182; LAMBDIN par. 28.2; SHISHA-HALEVY, "Existential Statements"

(a)
1. eīc-ουρμμαη ιππογ ογουπολίς... (IV 25)
2. eīc-ουρμμαη μελ νενεσεινοε αγγ γενρωμε εγγω ιμος αγ-ανον-ναπεξ (III 74)
(NB: eγγω ιμος adnominal circumstantial qualifying γεν-: "Who say")
3. επμα ιτταβε ιταγκα-μωγχε ιτρετε eīc-πογομε ε-
tογαβ μηππαfoκ ετταυν ιταγκαπεξε νητργ (III 94)
(NB: etoγαβ, ετταυν relative present forms (qualifying πογομε and πταφος) predicating the statives ογαβ, "which is holy", ταυν "which is precious")
4. eīc-γινετε δε ατεπλανο ικκοογε ογωνι αθολ (Orig. 413)
5. πωυλ ιταγκοος θεαγαβ μαν ειςγιμνε θηγου τηγαξε2 εροογ γαθην (III 89)
(NB: although eīc-γινετε seems to have been generalized for all genders/numbers, γιμνε replaces γινε here with a 3rd plural presented pronoun)
6. eīc-παι πε πωι (III 166)
7. eīcoγωρωμε αγει (A I 54)
8. eīcπωξωμε κινοβε νιμ eīc πκωξε εγεεενα αγω ικολ-
αις eις γιμνες (Ch. 171)

(b)
1. τμοκκεκ ιμοι eīc-γεντομε (IV-172) —
(NB: ἔμοικε present form (section 15.1) “I have been considering, pondering”)

2. εἰκ-τοῦτο εἶπε ἔπομπε ἦρμημα ἰδέσεια (P 130.5 79 1)
   (NB: ἦρμημ present “I have been reading”)

3. εἰκ-τομὲ ἔπομπε ἦρμη εἰκὼν (Ch. 173)
   (NB: ἦρμη present, predicing a stative (section 16.1): “I have been going”; εἰκὼν circumstantial present (section 15.1.1) “I searching”)
UNIT (IV): THE DURATIVE ("BIPARTITE") CONJUGATION
   (sections 15-18)

15.1 The PRESENT: durative infinitive rheme: personal pronoun, Proper Name, demonstrative or definite nominal theme-actor
15.1.1 Conversions
15.2 The existential present: durative infinitive rheme, an indefinite nominal (indef. or zero-determinated) or pronominal theme-actor
15.2.1 Conversions

16.1 The present: stative verbal rheme, personal pronoun, Proper Name, demonstrative or definite nominal theme-actor
16.1.1 Conversions
16.2 The existential present: stative verbal predicate, an indefinite nominal (indef. or zero-determinated) or pronominal theme-actor
16.2.1 Conversions

17.1 The present-based future: personal pronoun, Proper Name, demonstrative or definite nominal theme-actor
17.1.1 Conversions
17.2 The existential present-based future, an indefinite nominal (indef. or zero-determinated) or pronominal actor
17.2.1 Conversions

(*) 18. Assorted durative examples: stative vs. infinitive. The STERN-JERNSTEDT rule (direct object of the durative infinitive).

15-19 THE DURATIVE ("BIPARTITE") CONJUGATION (Table F)

This present-tense conjugation pattern combines a Proper Name, definite noun, demonstrative or personal pronoun (prefix-pronoun, Table A 5b) as theme (subject) and actor, with a situational verbal rheme (predicate): the durative infinitive (15), e.g. "in the action or course of hearing" (cf. English "writing" as in "He is writing"); or with the stative (16), a special form expressing (for transitive verbs) passive state (cf. "broken", "written" as in "It is written"). For intransitives
(e.g. verbs denoting movement, posture, condition or quality), the stative conveys the condition of being in action or state ("I am coming", "The boy is thirsty") and replaces the durative infinitive as the normal rheme in the durative conjugation. A certain stative (נхо, "being in the course of going") is used as auxiliary with the lexical infinitive, forming a compound future (17). An adjective is a third word-class predicated in the durative conjugation (19): "I am here", "God is in this house". Like another major non-verbal clause pattern, namely the Nominal Sentence, the durative conjugation is negated by (נ-) ..... א, enveloping the negated clause.

In the case of indefinite actor nouns and pronouns, the durative conjugation is combined with the existential (affirmative) בְּ or (negative), (נ)Μנ- constituting existential durative predications.

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
Stern, parr. 366, 371, Steindorff parr. 311-312, 316-317, 418; Till, parr. 251-252, Vergote parr. 158; Lambdin parr. 24.2; Polotsky, "Conjugation System" parr. 5-9, 19-24, 28-29

15.1 THE PRESENT: DURATIVE INFINITIVE RHHEME, personal pronoun, proper name, demonstrative or definite nominal theme-actor (Table F1)

Negation: נ- ... או ... או

NB (the so-called stern-jernstedt rule):
The definite, indefinite or pronominal direct object of the durative infinitive is normally introduced by the preposition נ-נ- and not attached directly to pronominal (construct) or pronominal forms of the infinitive (נ-נ-א变速 "I love God" נ-נ-א变速 "I love him"). The verb "want, desire" is a unique exception ("I want them", נ-נ-א变速). On the other hand, zero-article objects are as a rule attached to the pronominal form: נ-ה变速-א变速 "He eats meat".

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
Stern parr. 490, 492, 494; Steindorff parr. 311-312, 316-317, 392; Till parr. 2, 258-261; Vergote parr. 118(1), 186; Lambdin parr. 18.1, 24.2, 26.1; Polotsky, "Conjugation System" parr. 5-9, 19-24; Young, "Present I"; *Shisha-Halevy, Chapter 3

1. נ-ה变速-א变速-ה变速-א变速 (Ch. 125)
   [OBS. נ-ה变速-א变速-ה变速 the direct object (of נ-ה变速) is here the infinitive א变速]
1. cecsoyn γαρ χε-ἀγαθον nim noun ne (III 72)
   [OBS. Note the plural treatment of the noun syntagm with nim]
2. ceφις cecsoyn cec (IV 22)
   [OBS. Note the asyndetic (conjunction-less) coordination, common in cases of enumeration]
3. κτωρι ἱερων γαρ (Ch. 41)
4. τεσι-οεικ men ρηθαις αγω τεσιμ (III 202)
   [OBS. Note the zero-determined object, which enters the immediate direct-object construction in the present]
5. ἄνερσι ἱερος ρωπ περι men τηφι-νομοτ ἵναι-πνουτε
   χε-κεμκεκ εξελπαθον εξωγν εροι (Wess. 9 103)
   {NB: εξελπαθογ nominalized relative (πετ-, section 31.1.1) with the indefinite article: "(thing)s that are evil")
6. ουκαθος πε πνουτε αγο περικ qme ἱερσιας qμακτε
   αε ἰπνοει (IV 1)
7. τω ρηθι πωςαγγελιον ετογας ἱεροχαεις τηφι εικ-
   γαν αε προμπα αγο τω χα εικαγλο εξελπαθε
   καμοτε (III 218)
   {NB: ετογας relative present predicating the stative; "which is holy"
8. τευ την επεθαναι χοο (A I 120)
9. ον ρωςε ρεοου (Ch. 39)
10. τεσιμ γαρ και εποψαλα-ματομελει ... τεφνοκα
11. ται και εποψαλα-ματομελει ... τεφνοκα
12. ταν εις αγας και ται και εποψαλα-ματομελει ... τεφνοκα
13. ται και εποψαλα-ματομελει ... τεφνοκα
14. ται και εποψαλα-ματομελει ... τεφνοκα
15. ται και εποψαλα-ματομελει ... τεφνοκα
16. ται και εποψαλα-ματομελει ... τεφνοκα
17. ται και εποψαλα-ματομελει ... τεφνοκα
18. ται και εποψαλα-ματομελει ... τεφνοκα
19. εις αγας και εποψαλα-ματομελει ... τεφνοκα
   {NB: εποψαλα, εποψαλα-ματομελει: determined relative forms (present and Adjective Verb respectively): "these that are evil", "these that are good")
THE FORMAL-FUNCTIONAL SYSTEM

20. ἔγραφε ἦν εὐλαβεῖ εἰπεῖν τῷ ἔρχοντι ὡσφὺ ζυλὰ (Wess. 9 143)
   {NB: ἦ... ἦ negatives ἔγραφε, originally εὐλαβεῖ: "it is (not) fitting, right"

21. ἕτερω ἦν ἔρχοντο ἴσοι μιὰ ἀρχαί ἐπφαν (III 192)
   {NB: rhetorical question: "Don't you...?"

22. ἥραν ἢμος γὰρ ἔθαυβαν ἅκαται ἁγίης ἐξ ὁμίλων ἔφταν ἔθαυβαν ἐς ἔφταν ἔπεμψαν ἔπεμψαν ἔστησεν (III 58)

23. πνῷας ἔμεν ἦν τῷ ἔφαν (III 193)

24. πνῷας ἔμεν ἦν ἐν οἴκῳ ἦμνῳ (III 197)

15.1. THE DURATIVE INFINITIVE PREDICATION CONVERTED
   (see Tables F1, G):

   (a) Circumstantial ε-: εὐστηθή / ερεπρῶμεν σῶμα
      Negatived ε(ν)εὐστηθή ἦν / ερεπρῶμεν σῶμα ἦν, ερεπρῶμεν
      σῶμα ἦν
      "He/the man (not) hearing" (also adnominal; 27-30)

   (b) Relative ετ-ετ-ετ: εὐστηθή (ετ(ν)εὐστηθή ...) / ετερεπρῶμεν
      σῶμα ...
      Negatived εὐστηθή ἦν (ετενεὐστηθή ἦν ...) / ετετερεπρῶμεν
      σῶμα ἦν ..., ετετερεπρῶμεν σῶμα ἦν ...
      "who is (not) hearing" "whom (he/you/the man) is/are (not) hearing" (31-33)

   (c) Second Tense (Second Present) ε-: εὐστηθή / ερεπρῶμεν
      σῶμα
      Negatived (ν)εὐστηθή ... ἦν / (ν)ερεπρῶμεν σῶμα ... ἦν
      "(It is) (not) ... that he/the man is hearing" (34-38)

   (d) Preterite κε-: κενεὐστηθή (...) ... κενερεπρῶμεν σωμα (...) ... κενερεπρῶμεν σωμα (...) ... κενερεπρῶμεν σωμα (...) ...
      "He/the man was (not) hearing"; also in hypothetical (remote) condition (39-41)

NB: (1) Following the converters, the pronominal themes are not prefix-pronouns as in the basic (unconverted) present, but suffix pronouns (Table A5b)

   (2) With the 2nd sgl. fem. pronoun (i.e. zero), the converters have the same form as with a nominal theme: ερε, ετερε-, ερε-, κετερε- or (for the relative) a special form ετε-.
FIRST PART

(3) Relative, 1st sgl et-  = et- (not *et- + *-1): see (1).

(4) Note the two forms of the negatived relative (according to the
negative: ἃ... ἃ or ... ἃ): ἔτεκτωτμ ἃ ἔτςωτμ ἃ / ἔτεκτωτμ ἃ ἔτςωτμ ἃ. Similarly
(circumstantial, prenominal): ἐμπρωμε σωτμ ἃ. ἐμπρωμε σωτμ ἃ.

(5) Note the difference between the circumstantial negatived present:
ἐ-ν-κτ-σωτμ ἃ / ἐ-μ-πρωμε σωτμ ἃ


BIBLIOGRAPHY:
Stern parr. 373, 391, 416-417, 428-429; Stein dorff parr. 329, 376, 459-460,
462, 466; Tell parr. 317, 329, 465-466, 470-471, 473; Vergote parr. 163(1),
164(1), 165(1), 166(1,3,4), 167(1,2,4); Polotsky, “Conjugation System” parr.
10-18, *Nom. Transposition parr. 11, 13-14; *Funk, “Qualitativ”

(a) Circumstantial:
1. ἰπτωτμ ἰτον εροι εἰςω ῃναι (Ch. 102)
   {NB: ἰτον particle, not personal pronoun or augens}
2. ἰτσωτμ εξοιε εγωμενομ ἰγω ἰναγ εσκοογε εὐριμε
   (Ch. 201)
3. τεκων τονω ἰνων ἰντανιμον ἐκσκοογον ἃν (RE 10 164)
4. ἰγωμενοτ ἐβολ εγκω ἰπενοσον ἐσαι ἐξων (Ch. 90)
5. ἰναγ εγαραυ ερενιμ ῃ-ν-ν ἰβαλ ἰμοσον ἐςαι ἰθωβ
   ἰνι ἰμονιον (IV 125)
   {NB: εγ- = ε-ογ-, not circumstantial converter but prepositional
phrase}
6. ἰγωμενε ῃναι εσογους ερβολ (III 39)
7. ἰπτωκτ- ἰρικε εἰςω ἐκ ντε (Ch. 103)
8. καν εγικτωκ ἐρενογειν ἁερο ἰθιπ ἰγκοτογ ἐγα-
   σογ (IV 25)
9. ἱφαμελετα ερενοογε επικα ῃναι (III 203)
   {NB: 2nd sgl. fem. actor}
10. ἰσαειε ῃναι ἰγω εσεσυμφοτει ομαι ἰθωβ ἰμοσον
    ἐκσοην ἱμοσον ἁν ἱως-ὑμο ἐρβο (III 135)
11. ἰγιντ- τεσογοια ἐκκων ἰ ἐτικκουν ἐγκελευς ἐαν ἃν
    (IV 13)
12. πεπιο ῃνωμε ντανεθεκ ἱβρε ἐρεποκειεν ἰω ἰμος
    ἁε ... (III 65)
13. ἶθε εὐπρεπὴν ἄγαν ἐρωτεύοντας ἰδανίαν εὐγγελίας ἐν αὐτοῖς ἐστὶν ἐνθαμόθεν ἐφευρέτευον ἱεροῦ ἑπεκτείν (III 149)
   (NB: ἱερεῖος plural οἱ ἱείν)

(b) Relative:

1. πῶς εἶδος ἐρωτεύοντας ἰδανίαν (IV 163)
2. πῶς εἶδος ἐρωτεύοντας ἰδανίαν (III 115)
3. ἡπερὰς ἵππιος ἐπετειρέον ἰδανίαν ἱππακάκε (III 200)
   (NB: ετε- a variant form of ἐπετε- with the 2nd sgl. fem. zero pronoun)
4. ἰερεῖεσειπαίκε ἀν ἱππενκλενοῦτε (Ch. 109)
5. ἰωμη εὐπρεπηθαγ αν ἐτμήτερο ἰππονε ἱερεῖετα χεραθα ἱπ-</p>
(d) Preterite:
1. νεμοκλεικ γαρ ἐγὼν ἔμητ χε-οὐατόμον πε (III 39)
2. νείκα-ψωγε ναὶ μαγατ ἔμη-νασωψε ομήκανα-λον ἄναι ὑτείμης (III 147)
   {NB: μαγατ 1st sgl. suffix -t following the final double vowel (indicating a laryngal consonant) of the reinforcer (augens) μαγ-α-; ἀνα- 1st sgl. form of the negative optative}
3. νεβρὴπνεεγεν ἅπερανβίας ἄνων ἕμνος (III 95)
4. ἰκακ νερτώβι οὐχοισις πε εἰφόγωμ ετρεζερψηρε ωψε ναὶ ἑβολ gué-χρεικκα (IV 27)
5. νεκακωμε ν ἐρρψε (A I 53)
   {NB: the circumstantial "carrying on" the preterite conversion}
6. ἐνετετκοογν ἄνερρουν νετετναργοτε ϒτογ ἀν πε (III 88)
   {NB: this is an instance of the hypothetical use of the preterite converter (section 41): a remote-hypothetical (irrealis) supposition and its result clause, νετετκα-, the past future ("you would not be afraid")}

15.2 THE EXISTENTIAL PRESENT: durative infinitive rhyme, indefinite (indef. or zero-article) nominal or pronominal theme-actor
οὐκ-ογραμε/ογα/πρωμε σωτή "A man/someone is hearing"
Negative (ἡ)μη-ογραμε/ογα/πρωμε σωτή "No man/none is hearing"

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
Stern par. 368; Steindorff par. 312; Till par. 266; Vergote par. 158(1); Lambdin par. 158(1); Polotsky, “Conjugation System” parr. 19-21, 35

1. οὐκ-ζεμνημε ἀ-εον μας ẑībol (III 199)
2. οὐϊάς ἀ-εος ἕτοτογ ναὶ νάναογ αγω ẑηταπνωεις ἀν (III 170)
   {OBS. ἀν negates the adverbial ẑητα-: "and not..."}
3. ογάρινη ὑτοτὴ ἀμωτή (Orig. 307)
4. μνάδογ γαρ ẑηπνωτή τηρη ὑτανουτε ταμιον ẑωε ὑτετ-
   φυσις εἰμητη επρωμε μαγας (P 130.4 104 124)
5. μηρο οὐδε ἄρχη μνάδογ ἄγνους ἅρωμε ἀρχει ἄν 
   ναπνουτε μαγας αγω περχε νωοεις ἄηπε μηρκας (A I 164)
THE FORMAL-FUNCTIONAL SYSTEM

15.2.1 THE EXISTENTIAL PRESENT: durative infinitive rheme, converted (see Tables F a, G)
(a) Circumstantial ἐγιν-, ἐγιν/ἐ(μ)ἐγιν- ὁρωμε/ωμα/ρωμε σωτη “A man/no man hearing” (also adnominal; 27-30); also ἐπεορωμε σωτη
(b) Relative ετεογιν-/ ἐτεμἐγιν- ὁρωμε/ωμα/ρωμε σωτη "whom a man/no man is hearing" (31-33); also ετεπεορωμε σωτη...
(d) Preterite νεογιν-, νεγιν-/νεμἐγιν- ὁρωμε/ωμα/ρωμε σωτη “A man/no man was hearing”, also in hypothetical (remote) condition (39-41); also νεπεορωμε σωτη

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
TILL par. 327; VERGOTE parr. 164(1), 165(1), 166(3,4), 167(2,3); POLOTSKY, “Conjugation System” parr. 33-35

(a) Circumstantial:
1. ὁρωμε εφωμος επογε ἦτοι ἐποιήκσουσε δωσι ἐργα (III 116)
   {NB: both circumstantial forms are here adnominal, qualifying ὁρωμε; ἐργα see ἐργη-
2. αἰει ἐργα ἑμῖντος ἐμὲ ὁρωμε κοογε εἰμεντι εροκ
   ἑγαγακ (Wess. 9 154)
3. ου τε ἰρινη ἐπογεμε ἐμεκριν-ῃπογε ἐρενεγμιντακα-
   εροτος ἰπ η επεφηρη ἐμινογε απιο νογε (Ch. 168f.)
   {NB: ἰρινη = τ-ἰερηνη; ἐρε-, ἐμἐγ- adnominal circumstantial present, predicating a stative form (section 16.1.1): “whose acts of impurity are not hidden”}
4. ταὶ τε θε εφακωμε ἐκας ἐλα ἐρεγας εἰκνῖται εἰκακε-
   εις (III 40)

(b) Relative:
1. πῶς ετεογινς ὁγοε ἐλον κε ἐπαγο ἐλον ἐτεβομε (Ch. 85)
2. ἦνε Γαρ ετεογινς κτο ἐλον εβολ ἐπακος επωοειν
   κατακατος σαπωο ον ἰδινεκτκο ἐλον εβολ ἐλο-
   ποεις επακοε (Young 4)
   {NB: σαπωο “There are many”, Adjective Verb (section 22.2)}
3. πεῦκο ἕν ἐνα ἰκπιωτ ετεμἐγελος κοογε ἐλον
   (Orig. 810)
(d) Preterite:

1. ἵμαι ον έκκενδρώμεν ηνότε καὶ ταξε (IV 180)  
   (NB: circumstantial preterite, expressing a remote wish (section 41.2): "would that ...")

16.1 THE PRESENT: STATIVE RHEME, personal pronoun, proper name, demonstrative or definite nominal theme-actor (Table F2; see Table I for the morphology of the stative form)

Negation: η- ... ἄν or ... ἄν

NB: (1) statives of transitive verbs express passive state, and are opposed in the durative present to the durative infinitive of the verb (section 15): σωτῆ: σώτη “choose” vs. “chosen”; εἰπε: ο “do, make” vs. “done”; τάμιο: τάμινη “create” vs. “created”. However, statives of intransitive verbs are mere replacements alternants of the infinitive in the durative present: with these verbs (meaning movement, posture, quality) the durative infinitive does not occur. Thus, for example, the stative ηγή represents in the durative present the verb εἰ “come/go”, ηγετε represents πωτ “run”, etc.

(2) The stative of εἰπε “do, make”, ο, is used with η- + noun (mostly zero-article) to express “be in the status/capacity/circumstance of...”, “have (the non-intransitive) quality of...”

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
Stern parr. 348-356; Steindorff parr. 316-317; Till parr. 251, 257; Vergote parr. 158(1); Lamdin parr. 21.2, 22.3, 24.2; Polotsky, "Conjugation System" parr. 5-9, 19-22, 24, 28-29

1. προβο ογονὴ εβολ (III 74)
2. σενογορπ (III 90)
3. τήνη εἰπνεκε (Ch. 98)
4. τεβακείος τεοθε ενηνεικ γηνοοος (III 204)
5. ἄνοκ ἄγος ἄγων πεκούνγες εζούν όγος (III 24)
6. τήνη επαρε ενεβία άγω τετήνης χωτθυτη (III 24)
7. τηροξτ ηρτ έθηνξι άγω τήνης νεκαμήνονος (Ch. 127)
8. πετστή ιπνω ζοριή έναγρα (Ch. 116)

[OBS. The definite relative πετ- is here topicalized, i.e. put outside the main construction as topic or prominent subject; “(as for) him who...”]

9. ἄπεπνεύεγε σοτων άν εζούν εννουτε (III 44)
10. ἐσεογ παὶ ὁ Ἱαπίκτων ἰηαναίητη (Orig. 390)
11. τεκλανσία πορχ ἀν ἐτσοφία συάε ἰτσοφία πορχ ἀν ἐτεκλεσία (III 54)
12. ἔντο ἀν ἰημενχοεις (Wess. 9 162)
13. ςο ἰημενχοεις ἔρε γαρ ἐνταγηπενχοεις εἰμββκ εβολ 2ιτοτπ ἀν ςο ἰημενχοεις ἐμετανοεὶ 2ηνμα ἐτουγήης (III 136)
14. Ὠτπην ἀν ὅητογ ἰηνομος (Ch. 95)
15. ἤπετκξω ἱηογ τοομε ερον ἀν (Ch. 95)
   {NB: πετ- the definite relative ("that which...") is here the theme-actor of the durative present, negated by ἦ-... ἀν}
16. πεκα ψον ψανες (III 117)
17. νεγηι μες ὡγαεον ϊον (IV 22)
18. ἀνοκ τοσώλι ἀγω ττβαινη εματε (A II 276)
19. πουσω ἰηπνωμε ψογείτ (IV 167)
20. νεικαξε ναστ (RE 10 159)
21. εφχενογ-κεκοκμος ἰηπρε ἰηπαι εἰε-ψο ἱκακε (Orig. 305)

16.1.1 THE STATIVE PREDICATION CONVERTED (see Tables F2, G):

(a) Circumstantial: ε-: εκσοτπ / ερεψρωμε σοτπ
   Negativd e(ν) κσοτπ ἀμ / εμπρωμε σοτπ ἀμ, ερεψρωμε σοτπ ἀμ
   "He/the man (not) being chosen" (also adnominal; 27-30)
(b) Relative ετ-, ετε-: ετσοτπ (ετ(ν)κοτπ ...)/ ετερεψρωμε σοτπ...
   Negativd ετσοτπ ἀμ, ετενκσοτп ἀμ / ετεηπωμε σοτп ἀμ..., ετεηροσμε σοτπ ἀμ...
   "who is (not) chosen" "(...) whom (he/you/the man) is/are (not) chosen" (31-33)
(c) Second Tense (Second Present) εκσοτπ / ερεψρωμε σοτπ "(It is...) that he/the man is chosen" (34-38)
   Negativd (ν)εκσοτπ ἀν / (ν)ερεψρωμε σοτπ ἀν
   "(It is) not... that he/the man is chosen"
(d) Preterite νεκσοτπ (...ψε)/ νερεψρωμε σοτπ (...ψε)
   Negativd νεκσοτπ ἀν (...ψε)/ νερεψρωμε σοτπ ἀν (...ψε)
   "He/the man was (not) chosen", also in hypothetical (remote) condition (39-41) "
NB: (1) Following the converters, the pronominal themes are not prefix-pronouns as in the basic (unconverted) present, but suffix pronouns (Table A5a)

(2) With the 2nd sgl. fem. pronoun (i.e. zero), the converters have the same form as with a nominal theme: ἐπε-, ἐτερε-, ἐρε-, ἑρε- or (for the relative) a special form ἑτε-.

(3) Relative, 1st sgl ἔτι = ἐτι- (not ἔτ- + ἔτι!) (see (1))

(4) Note the two forms of the negated relative (according to the negator: ἄν ... ἄν or ... ἄν): ἐτερὶκτὶ ἄν, ἐτκτὶ ἄν / ἐτέτπρωμε σοτὶ ἄν, ἐτερεπρωμε σοτὶ ἄν. Similarly for the circumstantial and prenominal.

(5) Note the difference between the circumstantial negated present: and the negated Second Present: ἐ-ν- ἕ-κτὶ ἄν / ἐ-ν- πρωμε σοτὶ ἄν and ἐ-ν- ἕ-κτὶ ἄν / ἐ-ν- ἕ-πρωμε σοτὶ ἄν respectively.

BIBLIOGRAPHY:

STERN parr. 373, 391, 416-417, 428-429; STEINDORFF parr. 329-331, 376, 457, 462, 466; TILL parr. 317, 329, 470-471, 465-466, 473; VERGOTE parr. 163(1), 164(1), 165(1), 166(1,3), 167(1,2); LAMBIDIN parr. 19.1, 24.1-2; POLOTSKY, "Conjugation System" parr. 10-18

(a) Circumstantial:

1. οὐνογογοτε εὐκη ῥηογμα ενδόγομν ἄν εβολ (Ch. 110)
2. ἄ-κοογν ἵογωμε ενδηκὴ ἄν ενκαβεγγ (Ch. 33)
3. σεξω ἰνεκκακε εγκομεν (Orig. 384)
4. ἰβποε ἄν εξι εβολ ἰπμυμκτηρίν ἐπεπητ ἰεἰ ἴοεικ (Ch. 51)
5. ἰ ὁνοδομ ενεπ ἵογρωμε ἰογωμτ ἰπονκροσ εεκπξειες ὑοοπ ῥπαια ἄν εξ-ονομ ἰνεκκε ἰμποε ἐρεπκξειες ὑοοπ ῥπαια ἰπεγκβυηε ἰδικιοιουν (III 134)

(b) Relative:

1. πικ ετογογ ῥητη (IV 121)
2. τεσκβω ετογογ ποοογν εττκκ εβολ ῥτβν ἰμ ἰκαβον (Wess. 9 141)
3. ἰνοοβ ῥμοου ετόω ετκνυ εβολ ἰπρωκ εντικο ἄν εκατογ τογ ῥεκκδομ τιρε (Ch. 29)
   (NB: οὐγ: see οὐ; ἑπτογ: see νιπε)
4. ἰπαν ετκοε (Ch. 127)
5. ποκακε ετκχ (III 153)
6. πάντα τονος ετερεπτωρ χαλάρ νιμας (IV 1)
7. ετερεπτωρικ χαλάρ ευολ νηθτογ αγω ερεπτωνειν τολμάτη
   ευολ νιμας αγω ενωγ εροφι εινεγεια (Wess. 9 108)
   {NB: the circumstantial, coordinated by αγω, "carries on" the
   relative conversion}
8. πετο νατανγτε (Orig. 353)
9. νιλο ετεο γρος (Ch. 10)
   {NB: o γρος is the pronominal construction of o νι-}
10. ται αν τε θε ετεο νατανγτε (A I 446)
    {NB: eteο: rel. 2nd sgl. fem. + stative}

(c) Second Present:
1. νεγνουγτε αν πε τι αλαα εγο νινικαλ ανναμμωνας (Ch.
   109f.)
   {NB: νι- is put in focus: "It is... that..."
2. ενεργουδας ωος των τενωγ (A II 53)
   {NB: των is in focus}
3. αγκοος εσ-επκαειτ (Ch. 81)
   {NB: ζκαειτ the stative of ζκο is emphasized (put in focus)}
4. εγκωβε τενωγ εροφ νιουγ (A II 540)
   {NB: νι- ογ is in focus}
5. εμο νηνουγ γαγ νουγγρ (III 110)
   {NB: νουγγρ is in focus}
6. ερνοκόνος νου νιμας (A I 69)
   {NB: νι- ογ is in focus}

(d) Preterite:
1. νεμμοτι πε ριπνα εντανει νηθτι (III 121)
   {NB: πε often accompanies the preterite conversion, apparently
   marking its clause as background for the adjacent context}
2. νεμνουντ ζιζεντανειον εγνες νουνιειν (III 48)
3. νιψωμε αυοδομα κιγομορτα νεγαζατ αν ιλααγ πε αλλα
   νεγνουλε πε αγω νεγκπαλες ζιπειι νποεικ αγω
   ετενενγουβε αγκουζογ ννουγγζνε γιτιμπουγτε (P 130.2 4
   84)
4. ανηλωτ αδι-αωτ ριπνολις ενεδογνές νηθτογ χε-σενε-
   ντακο κιμηρωμε αυοδομα κιγομορτα (III 169)
   {NB: eneq-: relative preterite (qualifying ριπνολις)}
5. τεφγχν ετενεον ηακαρπος νουνοει (IV 186)
   {NB: etneco- relative preterite (qualifying τεφγχν)}
6. νερενεφρο ογιν νουγον νιμ (Ch. 194)
16.2 THE EXISTENTIAL PRESENT: STATIVE RHEME, indefinite (indef. or zero article) nominal or pronominal theme-actor:

οὐν-οὐγρωμένος/οῡς/ρωμέ σοτίν “A man/someone is chosen”

ἥν-οὐγρωμένος/οῡς ρωμέ σοτίν “No man/no one is chosen”

For Bibliography, see section 15.2

1. οὐγκεχενθὸς χώος εφισόοι εματε (A 1 244f.)
2. μη οὐγκλαγός ἄρωμη οὐγκλαγός ημερεῖς ζηνετε ερωτῆ (III 140)
3. οὐγκεχενθὸς χώος (A 1 263)
4. μηλαγγίαν ημεν ἄρωμη ἰοράω ἰοναικόπ-ημε μέμοντ (III 27)
5. μηρωοῦς ογαλα παραξούμεν αψις ἄνω εφύσοες παραξοῦμεν (III 95)

[OBS. Note the combination of an existential present (μηρωοῦς ογαλα) with an affirmation of existence with the existant qualified by an adnominal circumstantial (ἄνω εφύσοες)]

6. οὐγκοίμενος ο νατυούτε (III 41)
7. οὑγκεχενθοοογες ονεγαγελιον χώος (Wess. 9 143)
8. μηρωμέν ενειμινε τοομε ερον ανον ηεξπρικτιανος (Wess. 9 122)
9. ζηναμα δε ετησώυτε εβολα ζητη μηρωμεν ξοεε ετεπραν ζι-εκημα (IV 4)

16.2.1 THE EXISTENTIAL PRESENT: STATIVE RHEME, CONVERTED (see Tables E, G):

(a) Circumstantial ευγν-, εγν-ε(μ)μη-ουρωμέ/ρωμέ σοτίν “A man/no man being chosen” (also adnominal; 27-30); also ερευγρωμέ σοτίν

(b) Relative ετεογν-ετεμη-ουρωμέ σοτίν... “(...) whom a man/no man is chosen” (31-33); also ετεερογρωμέ σοτίν...

(c) Preterite νεμη-ουρωμέ σοτίν “A man/no man was chosen”, also in hypothetical (remote) condition (39-41); also νερεουγ-ρωμέ σοτίν

For Bibliography, see section 15.2.1

(a) Circumstantial:
1. ζηναμα... ευγκεζενοοδ ημηρωμε νοογας ηιτιογ (IV 68)
2. ουγκεκεμινεν ον ηωμη χωο εμμεογαρε ρητ εβολα ζιωγον ερεπνακπον σοτίν εματε άνω εκακωγ (P 131.6 90 го)
{NB: κιωγ stative corresponding to the infinitive κινενε}
3. ἐσε ἐσε-εἰο ηρεκαταφρονει ειμιλααγ ἑσωβ ἱτειε ἐσον ιτι ἱντ (III 150)
   {NB: ἱντ: the post-consonantal 1st sg suffix -τ is zeroed following
the final τ of ἱντ-, the pronominal form of ἱντ-}
4. ἄφαστε ερογι ρωγοι ἱκετόπας ἄν- αἰνε ἐρεκεογι ἡνγις ἱνςω (III 38)

(b) Relative:
1. πμα ετεουγηννηψε σοογε ερογ (Ch. 159)
2. πραν ετεικερας σγ ηρογ (A 1 391)
3. πετεινψι ωοον ητειμηταγος (RE 10 161)
4. πνουτε ετειμηλασυ ο ηκαβον ηκαγαψ (A 1 382)

(c) Second Tense:
1. (not shenoute) ετειμηῃεε ε ωοον εβολ γηνεκεςγη γαγ ἐβολ γηπααος ληπε (Judges 14:3)
   {NB: The Second Tense used in a rhetorical question: "It is
that...?"}

(d) Preterite:
1. ετεουγκεκαγος γαρ πντ ἱκςωε εφοτι εβολ ... (Z 461)
   {NB: This is the circumstantial preterite as a hypothetical remote
condition, see section 41.1)

17.1 THE PRESENT-BASED FUTURE (Table F3): personal pronoun,
proper name, demonstrative or definite nominal theme-actor:

η/πρωμη ναςωτη
\textit{negatived} (η)η//(η)πρωμη ναςωτη α\textit{n}

The Coptic future is present-based, predicking the stative \textit{ηa} ("in the
course of going") followed by the infinitive; compare English "I am
going to...", the French \textit{futur proche} and similar periphrastic future
forms.

NB: The second person plural form of the future is \textit{τετναςωτη} (only
one \textit{n}, common to the prefix pronoun and the future characteristic -\textit{ηa}-)

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
Stern par. 367, 379; Steindorff par. 318-320; Till par. 252; Vergote par.
158(2); Lambdin par. 18.2, 19.1; Polotsky, "Conjugation System" par. 5-9,
19-22, 25, 28-29; Wilson, Chapters 7-10;
1. κνάςων ἡ τεταρτημων εὐδηνεγαίκε (A I 131)
2. πεγήνατε ἅκαμον ἤθε νοητρίπ ... ἄγω τεγγυχν ἄκρωμρή ὅθε εὐθενέκεσ (IV 481.)
3. ἐσχα-αγιστὶ ὅντει ὁσαποτ ὅσατηντι ἐσχα-αγια- 
ρέσι ἐσαφαχθε ὁσαποτ ὅθων (IV 35)
4. ἵασεπσωπο (Woss. 9 165)
5. σεμεριτὶ  ὅτιπνουτε ὅναρωμε (IV 41)
6. τίματι-ς αν ὅμακ ὅπεντο ἐβαλ ὅπνουτε (III 121)
7. γρο ὅμα ἴστρο (IV 89)
8. πεκειστ ἄγω τεκαναγ ὅταγανοκ ὁκασαρή ὅασιτ 
κασεγαίε (IV 82)
[OBS. Note the prosodic difference between the nominal and the 
pronominal themes-actors (in the durative as well as base conjuga-
tion): the former may be separated from its theme by various 
expansions (or by particles), the latter may not, being in close 
junction with the theme]
9. ὅτακακ εβαλ ἁν ἁλλά ὅταμας ἐπεκα ὅγογ (III 38)
10. ὅτακητκ ἐβλος ἁν ἁματμε (IV 19)
11. ὅπαβαη ὅτυς ἁν ἐρού (III 198)
12. ὅταβεθδομ ἐρον ἁν (P 130.5 50 220)
13. πνούτε γαρ ἀκαρώμ ἁν (III 97)
14. ἵτατος ἁν ὅνει ἁν εναιπνον ὅτοκ ἄγω ὅτος ἵτατος ἁν 
ὅνει ἁν ὅμακ ἁν εναιπνον ἁγω παρίστων ἱπεκε (IV 38)
15. ἵτατος ἱνεκόου ἱασογεν-περίθοου ἁν ὅπνως ἴςεπωτ 
ἐρατ (Ch. 83)
16. ἱασρωμε εὐγκτκ ἁν ὁσασώττ ἱαηοὔπε το ἐκτρου 
ἐρού (III 191)
17. τεμασογγ λογο (III 191)
18. ἑνε-νεικες ἁαν (A I 369)
(NB ἑνε-: prefix marking interrogation)

17.1.1 THE PRESENT-BASED FUTURE CONVERTED (Tables 
F3, G):

(a) Circumstantial ἑ-: ἐνασώττ / ἱἐπρωμε ἁασώττ “He/the 
man being about to hear” (also adnominal; 27-30)
Negativet ἑ(ν)ἀνασώττ ἁν / ἱἐνπρωμε ἁασώττ ἁν, 
ἱἐπρωμε ἁασώττ ἁν
(b) Relative ἐτ- ἐτ-: ἐνασώττ “who is about to hear” ἐτ(ν)α-
THE FORMAL-FUNCTIONAL SYSTEM

εωτί / ετερεπρώσε νάσωτί “whom he/you/the man is/are about to hear” (31-33)

Negatived έναν (έτεννάκασωτί άν) / ετερεπρώσε νάσωτί άν ..., ετερεπρώσε'νασωτί άν ...

(c) Second Tense (Second Future) ε-: εύνακασωτί / ερεπρώσε νάσωτί “(It is ...) that he/the man is about to hear” (34-38)

Negatived (n)εύνακασωτί ... άν / (n)ερεπρώσε νάσωτί ... άν

The Second Future is also used following the conjunction ήε as consecutive and final clause (clause of result and purpose: “so that ...”, “in order to ...”); εκα (a) to with εύνα-, also expressing purpose, probably governs the circumstantial, not Second Future. See texts 5-9 under (c) below.

(d) Preterite (Past Future) ήε-: ένευνακασωτί / ερεπρώσε νάσωτί “He/the man was about to hear/ would hear/ would have heard” (39-41): the Past Future is used especially to express remote or hypothetical result (“irrealis” apodosis, 41.3) and remote wish (41.2)

Negatived ένευνακασωτί άν (... πε) / ερεπρώσε νάσωτί άν (... πε)

NB: note the two forms of the circumstantial and relative future, according to the negator (n- ... άν or ... άν): ετεννάκασωτί άν, ετνακασωτί άν / ετερεπρώσε νάσωτί άν, ετερεπρώσε νάσωτί άν; similarly (circumstantial, pronominal) εμπρώσε να- σωτί άν, ερεπρώσε νασωτί άν.

BIBLIOGRAPHY:

Stern parr. 382, 418-419; Steindorff parr. 333, 440; Till parr. 318, 360-361; Vergote parr. 163(2), 164(2), 165(2), 166(1,3), 167(1,2,4), 180(1); Lambdin parr. 25.1(b), Polotsky, “Conjugation System” parr. 10-18

(a) Circumstantial:

1. κομάματ έκακατον ευναχιτόν εγούνε επεκράσῃ δαγ εσογν ετεκιντερο εκνατ ήον ηίμον ηηιαν (RE 10 161)
2. ούνιοκαίρος ηηιν ηερεπνούτε ... ηαογεες-παγανε (Α I 13)
   [OBS. The circumstantial specifies here an expression of time (ουκαίρος)]
3. ρενκεπονήρον νίνασωχογ τηρογ (Ch. 52)
   {NB: νίνα- = εντίνα-, the circumstantial converter zeroed before a syllabic nasal (n)}
4. παραπετῆς ἔνας ἦν ἦν ἄναθεν ὡς ὑπερθέν καὶ ἑταῖρων ἔστιν ἕπεκτος ἔστιν ἐν ἑνωπτῷ ἀνὰ μὲν ἑνώπως ἀν ἐροῦ (Ch. 32)

(b) Relative:

1. ἵππων ὁμόν ον ἐτῶμ ζωῆς ἔστατος ἔστω ἐν ὑπερθέθαι οὐ ἔστι (IV 58)
   [OBS: ἵππων ὁμόν topicalized (put forwards as a prominent subject):
   "(As for..., ...”; so too ὑπερθέθαι in the next text]
2. ὕπομον ὑπερθέθαι ἐν τῇ ἡμέρᾳ ἔτους εὐπορίαν ἔτη ἀριστοκρῖος ἡμᾶς (IV 4)
3. σιντῶμ ἱδία-τάταν πρὸς ἑπεζοῦον ἐτερετάπρο ὃς ὁμόν (III 138)
4. πταν ἑτερεπαξοῖς ἵνα ὁμόν ἐντειμίνῃ ἑκτῆς (Mun. 99)
5. πετενεκταῖς ἀν ὡς ὁμόν ὑπετεκτωμβυστι (III 154)
6. ἱταμοιοι ὧν ἐτόμσιον ὅποιος ἔστω ἐν ὑπερθέθαι οὐ ἔστιν ἐν ὑπερθέθαι οὐ ἔστιν ἐν ὑπερθέθαι ἔτη ἀριστοκρῖος (IV 19)
   (NB: ἔτηοι- a lexemic premodifier: “do rather...
7. ἱπταὶ περ ἑτερἐ-ντεκταῖς-τεγχῖς-τεπ-τούκ (Ch. 27)
8. πετεκτωμος ὑμοῦ ὡς ἕπετειμιτῆς ἔστω ἡμῶς ἕπετειμιτῆς ἕτεκα (Ch. 73)
   (NB: ἔπτα- Second Aorist, by which ἕτεκα is emphasized (put in focus): “It is... that...”
9. πιὸς ἔταμχας ἐντρῶτης τῷ ἔτομ ἕπεζοῦον ἔταμχας ἐντρῶτης ἔστω ἓπετειμιτῆς ἔστιν ἕπετειμιτῆς ἕποια ἕποια ἕποια ἕποια (III 165)
   (NB: ἕπετειμιτῆς: ἕ- (direct object marking preposition) + ἕ- (plural def. article, assimilated to ἕ- + definite relative present predicating the statical ἕποια)

(c) Second Future:

1. ἐραταῖς ἐναὶ ἀνὰ ἐγνατοὶ ἑν ἐγνατοὶ (P 130.5 61 35)
   (NB: ἑγνατο in focus)
2. εἰναίς-πουμ οὐ γνωστῷ ὡς ἔστι (III 70)
   (NB: ἑγνατο in focus)
3. ἐγναταῖς ἐν ἑιν ἐγναταῖς ἐν ἑιν ἐγναταῖς (III 98)
   (NB: ἑς-, ἐ- in focus)
4. ἐταῖς ἐν ἑιν ἐταιρεῖς ἐν ἑιν ἐταῖς (Ch. 28)
   (NB: ἵς- in focus)
5. ἔπικος ἐπὶ ἑκτῆς ἄνα ἐνταῖς-να τῷ ἐν ἑτερἠς ἐν ἕκσατ (Ch. 199)
   (NB: ἑκτ- ἐρ-... na- consecutive: “so that...”)

--
6. ἀραφέως ἔπαισες αὐν ἐνα ἔσχατος ταρούγα ἔνθα ἔ ταρούτι ἔκας ἐμοῖ τι ἐγνάξη ἔπεσσον (Ch. 199 = Lc. 6:38)
   (NB: ἔκας final "in order that...")
7. ἵκεμαρτρυγος ἐνταγήνει ἐσολ ἰπέκοσον ἔεκληρος τοῦτον ἵκτο ἱμίπτον ἱμπράγαμ ἱμίκακα μίακως (IV 223.)
   (NB: ἔεκληρο- final)
8. ἄνοιήν η ἕσων νε πεκτρεψίμηνεῃ σογω- νίν ἵγω ἑρίτι ἵποιο (III 107)
9. ἦτοκ ἐν .AppCompatActivity τὴνηρ Ἰστότη ἔτρεκαποτάτες ἱπέκην ἱφθὲν ἵσων νε ἤθελκα ἰπεῖκος ἔκας ἐκλάδιμε ἴσωτι ἐπολογος ἱπνοὺτε .PLAINLY (III 99)

(d) Past Future
1. ενεκάσθηςοι Σαρς αν (i.e. the well) ἴεκαρψε ἐροοῦν αν ἐτρεγγε-μοογ (III 70)
2. (Had they known the things in our heart,) ἰεγνάζετο ἱπατήτα- 
   μοογ ἐροοῦν (III 108)
3. ἐνεφσοογος ἔε-νεκταπτάτης ἐσπαι ἐρωῃ σεπαμοουτι 
   νεφαλοκογ άν πε (RE 10 164)
4. ἐπεταποῦτε ναβακε ἰππε ἱκάκας ἵποιο (III 203)
   (NB: ἐπεταμ- Second Tense (Second Preterite Future), putting 
   ἱκάκας τελοι in focus)
5. ἵκιοι ὑν ὕνεγκαταλόγοις ἱποοῦν ἰκδειατσωτι ἐτημαγ (Mun. 110)

17.2 THE EXISTENTIAL PRESENT-BASED FUTURE: indefinite 
   (indef. or zero article) nominal or pronounal theme-actor

οὐν-ογρῳμέν/ογα/ρῳμε νασωτῖ “A man/someone is going to 
   hear”

ὁν-ογρῳμέν/ογα/ρῳμε νασωτῖ “No man/no one is going to 
   hear”

For Bibliography see section 15.2
1. οὐναγα βασὶ ἱγιμε ἰκα-εγγε ἐρογ (Leyd. 332)
2. ἰ αὐῃ ἰγρῳμε κακαι-ογκας ἐρεπεκγο ποονε κ θην 
   ἐπαγγε (A II 24)
   (NB: a rhetorical question)
3. ἱκαιλασ ἰρῳμε ὑμογ (Wess. 9 133)
4. ἂείμε γὰρ Ἰη-μηὴς ἁὐμη ἐξωρικ-ψι ἔμε (IV 172)
5. οὐναγαθον νῦν ἁὐμη ἐνα (IV 188)
6. ἀρισμα ἁνείμε (Wess. 9 141)
7. εῳχε-πρηιμεέε γὰρ ἄνηγοντε ἀναμαζον ἀν ἀμεριθμε ἐττηνσεν ἦνανας ὡν ἀναμαζον ἤμον (III 161.)
8. ἀμεριθμα ἑστὶν ἄνεμελει ἐπαριετά ἐνεγευερε τιτεβο νῦν (Ch. 169)
9. ἀμερι οὐνα εσχημα ἁὐμηονοτε ερον (IV 3)
10. οὐναγαθον ἁὐμη ἐξαε-πευχιαστηριον (A I 78)
11. ἀμεριγρωμε ἁνε-τῆς τιτετεςω (Wess. 9 97)

17.2.1 THE EXISTENTIAL PRESENT-BASED FUTURE, CONVERTED

(a) Circumstantial εὐγυ/-εμή-ογρυμε ναςωτή "A man/no man being about to hear" (also adnominal; 27-30); also ερεογρυμε ναςωτή
d(b) Relative εὐγυ/-ετεμή-ογρυμε ναςωτή ... "(...) whom a man/no man is about to hear" (31-33); also ετερεογρυμε ναςωτή ...
(c) Second Tense ερεογρυμε ναςωτή "(It is ...) that a man/someone is about to hear" (34-38)
(d) Preterite νεογυ/-εμή-ογρυμε ναςωτή "A man/no man was about to hear" (39-41)

For Bibliography, see section 15.2.1

(a) Circumstantial:
1. ὅφρο τε εὐγυγας ἁμβυ ρεγακ επων επωμῃ ἐβολ γιτοοτε (III 60)
2. γενειοτε εὐγυγερωμε ἁπικτος ναμε ναγηπομενε τιτςγαςγη ἁπκοεις ετεπηνοτε τας ετβεπογμῃ ετεογυγας ἐβεγαν ενεγειοτε (III 172)
3. ὅσεν εὐγυγεκμηνου εναγωμε ναερε ἀγηνος ἁνοβε γραίνιτε (III 206)
{NB: εναγωμε circumstantial of the Adjective Verb ἁμβα-ς "(He) is numerous" (section 22.2, 22.5), adnominal (qualifying γενειοτε)}

(b) Relative:
1. πην ετεμής ἁμμη ἀμμυ ἀγημονος γηνεκιμιαςεβας (RE 10 164)
(NB: ἔσων = εἰσων (Conditional))

2. ἔσει ετεθηλαζα ἐνθην νασω β επαγο ετῆβωκ επεωθοὺς ἔπναγ ἐπεσάλα ... ταί ον τε ἐτεθηλαζα γξατ ἐνθην νασω β ἐπαγ ετῆματα εγραί ἐντερποσφορὰ (IV 66)
   {NB: ἔ- γα λ “be last”}

3. ἔσει ετεθηθεῖν ἡ βονὲν ἡ πορνὸς κ ἡ ῥεφιαῖα - εἰσωλον κ οσικ ἡ μαλακος ... νακαληνομεῖ ἐνθηθεῖρο ἐπεινοῦτε ταί ον τε ἐτεθηθαιτο νγόνο ἡ ῥεφιῳρπι νακαληνομεῖν ἐνθηθεῖρο ἐπεινοῦτε (III 192f.)

(c) Second Future:

1. ἔσευγα νασυκος ον κε - αγ (III 72)
   {NB: κε-, following a verb of saying, is obligatory; the interrogative αγ is in effect the direct object of κω}

(d) Preterite (Past Future):

1. ηνεβίωμε νασαμαζετ εσου ετῆβωκ (IV 84)
   {OBS. Note the double negation}

(*) 18 ASSORTED DURATIVE EXAMPLES: stative vs. infinitive, the STERN-JERNSTEDT Rule (definite or personal-pronoun direct object of the durative infinitive introduced by ν-νμο-, zero-article object immediately attached to the prenominal form of the infinitive)

1. ἔντροτε αν γωλως ογανε ἐντωτερπ αν (III 38)
2. ἄγ μεν τιν ευπο ναω σεμετε ἔσου γ (III 45)
   {OBS. Note the use of the passive-equivalent 3rd person plural in the absence of a stative (there is no stative correspondent to the infinitive μοτε); see OBS. to text 18}

3. Ναυ ἔσεν πετενάωον αν ψαψωπε Γω ψεναον ψαψω εψαψω (III 224)
   {OBS. λο εγ- “cease to ...”; in the circumstantial present complementing following a “descriptive verb” (“continue”, “stop”, “have already done”), the intransitive infinitive may replace the stative: hence εψαψω}

4. τετο νόγοτεν αρκακε τετολαδ ἀκε οτε πετνατζ ακογ (Ch. 152)
   {OBS. Note here and in text 6 the alternation το- vs. ο- (non-durative vs. durative conjugation, respectively), which distinguishes the copular or intransitive το- (“be”) from the deriving-transitive το- “make” (in dur. and non-dur. patterns)}
5. e우세νασογι-τεριη ἤπαξει ἡ παξωμ ετζηα ἤνε ετζηη ἡ τενογυνυνη ντο ειε-τενασογι-νετζηη τηρου ἦπινογη (III 191)
6. νετο φηην ερεα αγρηην ακαρή εφικιζεαε (RE 10 163)
7. σεο ἡπαγαοεις τενογ ρηπηα ετογηζηη (III 136)
8. ημιηερο ρηπημυε εκκατωτ νας αγο ντος εκκαοτε τημοσ ερος (Ch. 125)
   (NB: Second Present forms, putting the prepositional phrases in focus)
9. ωγαοην ψωοο (i.e. Jesus) εμπατηςηε εβολ ρημαρια (Cat. 41)
10. σερνς αγο σεροεις (IV 24)
11. ναι γαρ 3αοο ενεικοογε αγο νεικοογε 3αοο εναι (IV 100)
12. ρίεοοεμε ηνητομ (said of the moral disease, in the members of the body) (IV 20)
   [OBS. For ρίεοοεμε and numerous other intransitive verbs, the
   morphological differentiation of infinitive and stative does not exist]
13. ρετηψοβε λαερατος ημετηςμετε μηπημυ (Ch. 91)
   (NB: ημετη μη... μη... / τεμημετε μη... “between X and Y”)
14. ρηκαη ν αγρη (IF 77, Dict. 456f.)
   [OBS. Note the opposition of intransitive stative in the durative
   conjunction vs. intransitive infinitive in the non-durative; see also
texts 4, 6, 9, 22]
15. τακαςαρκια ετογειρε τημοσ ν ετογναας (IV 48f.)
   [OBS. Note the opposition of the immediate object construction
   (αας) in the non-durative infinitive with the mediate construction
   (ειρε μημος) in the durative, the verb and object (the 3rd sgl.
feminine for “it”) being equal; similarly in texts 20, 26, 27]
16. ημοκ δε κρονος τοςωυ τημοσ αγο καςω ναι ερονη ερος (III 77)
17. ρμε τημοσ εματε (P 130.2 54 313)
18. σεηηαεη ζιηηηηηε σεμε τημοσ ζιηηεκερσωου τημαηημύ (Ch. 106)
   (NB: The combination of a 3rd person plural pronominal actor,
direct object and εβολ ζιηη-ζιηοοτ- “by...” expresses in
Coptic the equivalent of the passive voice. Thus, for “he was chosen
by God” we have in Coptic what would be literally translated
“They chose him by God”. See also text 2)
   [OBS. σογωψ is the only verb that is immediately connected with
its direct object in the durative, constituting an exception to the Stern-Jernstedt Rule; see also text 29]

19. γωϊνε μεν εν τη καρπος ἐν καρπαις γενοευγε δε εγ τ ἴπευγ-καρπος ἐνατπε (A 1 256)
{NB: εγ- circumstantial present)
[OBS. Note here the difference in construction between the definite (πεγ-) and zero-article direct objects, the former entering the 
mediate (ν-), the latter the immediate constructions]

20. ειτε πεταγανωψα ειτε πεταγανωψαν ινον αν (III 132)

21. πεταγυς ιτηε αγω ετις γκας αγω ετρωγεινε-ιπευ- 
βαν (A 1 234)

22. σερπκειον μαλαξε (A 1 96) ακρπκερκιαξε (P 130.2 137 337)
{NB: -πκε- is a lexeme premodifier, modifying the stative and 
infinite: “do also...” cf. “do rather” (see text 21) and -πψπιης(ν)-
“do first...”}

23. ηψγ-γμοτ ινππηνγετε (IV 78)

24. τεογυνμνοντε ηψγ-γπητε (III 202)
{NB: ογγω- a variant of ογω-, the construct state of ογων 
orthographically identical with the absolute (object-less state))

25. ιοε ιτακκωος (Ch. 39)

26. ιοοςος ιινος (III 117) τετηνω δε ινος ιτωτη (III 135)

27. κεπει ινος καικασ ικηεος ιηποπη (E 66)

28. τετηνουλα τετηκησει τετηνουμετα ιτηπηηερο ιηπηνγε 
(E 71)
[OBS. Asyndetic (conjunctionless) coordination is characteristic of 
enumerative-listing style]

29. γωμε γαρ νιμ ογεγνωγγη γαγω ινηηεγγγω δε ημγει (E 93)
UNIT (V): THE ADVERB PREDICATED
(sections 19-21)

19.1 The adverb predicated in the durative pattern: personal pronoun, demonstrative, Proper Name or definite nominal theme
19.1.1 Conversions

19.2 The adverb predicated in the existential present: an indefinite nominal (indef. or zero-determinated) or pronominal theme
19.2.1 Conversions

(*) 20.1 The adverb predicated in the delocutive Nominal Sentence pattern
(*) 20.2 The adverb predicated by the auxiliary in the tense base conjugation
21.1 oyoēi Ń- “Woe unto...!”
21.1.1 Conversions
21.2 ṃaq “to him” predicated (modal-future possession predicated by Ń-)

19.1 THE PRESENT: THE ADVERB PREDICATED IN THE DURATIVE PATTERN: personal pronoun, proper name or definite nominal theme (subject) (Table F4):

Like the durative infinitive and the stative rhemes (sections 15-18), the adverbial rheme (predicate) — prepositional phrase or "lexical" adverb denoting spatial rest situations or relationships and their metaphorical semantic extension (see section 5: "on a hill", "in your mouth", "with me", "against you" "outside", "here", "there", "where?" — is predicated in the present tense. The adverbial rheme follows the theme (subject): prefix pronoun (Table A 5b), demonstrative, proper name or definite noun. Like the durative conjugation, the adverb predication is negated by (Ŷ-)... AN.

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
Stern parr. 366, 371; Steindorff parr. 310; Till parr. 249-250; Vergote parr. 192(a); Lamdin parr. 18.1, 24.2; Polotsky, "Conjugation System" parr. 5-6, 19-22, 28; Shisha-Havely parr. 1.2.1.1
THE FORMAL-FUNCTIONAL SYSTEM

1. ἐφογγυτοπος εὐγογαβ (Wess. 9 171)
2. ἀνων τῇς ἱεροτοπος (III 24)
3. ἐφογγυτομπος ἐπερατια (Wess. 9 145)
4. ἐνάσθης ἁν ἡξισυτοθονει εροος (III 136)
5. εὐγομας αγις ἐφευτοος ἀναμενες (Wess. 9 161)
6. μεις ἐποκόμε ἐπερατος ἐρεφεσεοος ψοον αν ἡγαλλα (Ch. 159)
7. ἡτε ἡπονυτε σιμιακ ἡγοοεις εις (III 101)
8. μεις ἡπειμα νεους ἡπειμα (III 79)
9. τεταὐριμτητε ἡπονοοβ ἡπραγμα εγος (Ch. 97)
   {NB: εγος adnominal circumstantial present; ἀγω stative of}
   ἀπω)
10. τῆς ἐφογγυτε παί γαρ ἑρον ἡτοοτῇ ἡποοις πεγες πεντα-
     ἐφογγυτε ετιτυντι (Ch. 98)
11. ἡτοου γκουγ νεινπιβαλ αν ἱκανων ἱνεγραφν (E 88)
12. σιμια (IV 18)
13. σαμαγ γαρ (A I 121)

19.1.1 THE ADVERB PREDICATED IN THE DURATIVE PATTERN: CONVERSIONS (Tables Fd, G)

(a) Circumstantial ε-: εφιμαγ / επερπωμε ημαγ "He/the man
    being there" (also adnominal; 27-30)
    Negated ε(ν)ημαγ αν / επερπωμε ημαγ αν, επερπωμε
    ημαγ αν
(b) Relative et-: ετημαγ "who is there"
    ετηνημαγ/ετεπερψομε ημαγ "where he/you/the man is/are"
    (31-33)
    Negated ετενημαγ αν, ετημαγ αν / ετεπερψομε ημαγ
    αν, ετεπερψομε ημαγ αν
(c) Second Tense ε-: εφιμαγ and εφιμαγ ... "There he is" and
    "(It is ...) that he is there" (34-38)
(d) Preterite νε-: νεφιμαγ / νεπερψομε ημαγ (νε)"He/the man
    was there", also in hypothetical (remote) condition (39-41)

   NB: note the two forms of the circumstantial and relative, according to
   the negator (ν- ... αν or ... αν): εφιμαγ αν/επερψομε ημαγ αν,
   ετημαγ αν/ετεπερψομε ημαγ αν or εφιμαγ αν/επε-
   ρψομε ημαγ αν, ετημαγ αν/ετεπερψομε ημαγ αν.
BIBLIOGRAPHY:
Steindorff parr. 374, 376, 459-460, 462-464; Till. parr. 317, 329, 443, 462;
Vergote parr. 163(1), 164(1), 165(1), 166(1.3.4), 167(1.2); Lambdin par. 24.2;
Polotsky, “Conjugation System” parr. 10-18

(a) Circumstantial:
1. καν εγώανιν ἡτέκανε κνάτωγνον ὀν εκζεκῳκ (III 100)
2. πρωμε εεξζαίβερμα νικοτκ νηκςωσωτ αν ἤποεικ
   μεμμοογ (Rossi 2/3 8)
3. ἅνε δε ἰνοβαλε ετύαθυερητε εῖτε ερενεουερητε
   μεν ἰνοθ ενεγημιωουε ἰνα (Ch. 87)
4. (If they defile themselves) εῖτε εγς.-πυμο εῖτε εγςςλευν-
   αςγην (IV 120)

(b) Relative:
1. πμα ετυγκζητγ (III 151)
2. νμαλε ετσοςια μπνουγε ετςγητκ (III 14)
3. μεσοοο ετςμαγ (Ch. 105)
4. αναγ ενειογωνγε ετςγημπτε μνεςοογ...ἀναγ ενειαβοκε
   ετςγημπτε μνειδροοομε (Mun. 105)
5. πρωμε ετεπεπλαγν ειωακ (Wess. 9 138)
6. υτςιακοςυος τιρψ (Ch. 28)
7. υτςιαρωκ μμαγ (Ch. 27)
   {NB: μη- coordinates here the 3rd plural with the 2nd sgl. in
    ρωκ: “...and theirs”}
8. μεςμαγ (III 160)
   [OBS. Contrast the use of the article μη- as a general formal
    antecedent of the relative (“they that ...”) with the specific lexical
    antecedent in text 3 above]
9. πετεροοο (IV 43)
   {NB: πετεροογ: the preposition ε-/επμα is used for the notion
    of owing or being indebted: the thing owed is theme (subject) or, as
    here, antecedent; the debtor noun/pronominal is governed by ε-}
10. πμα ον ετεπεπιπνα μακαβρτον μητγ (Wess. 9 97)
11. πελιοκ τευνς ετςλήτγ (III 205)
   {NB: the theme here, following the relative converter, is the 2nd sgl.
    fem. zero suffix}
   [OBS. Note the placement of the adverb τευνς, which (being
    enclitic) occupies the second position in the prosodic unit (antece-
    dent + relative form), while qualifying the relative clause alterna-
    tively, it could be taken to qualify πελιοκ]
THE FORMAL-FUNCTIONAL SYSTEM

(c) Second Present:

1. εἰγτων παλαχε (Ch. 166)
   {NB: των in focus; also in the following texts}
   [OBS. Note the immediate apposition of the postposed nominal theme after εἰγτων, unintroduced by ἃνι-}

2. ερενενκες των (A I 212)

3. ερειογας ωο των τενδε εφημωτε (A II 53)

4. ποι ετερετσελετ ἧμαι εφημαγ ἱδηημυμιοσ (Ch. 138)

5. ερεπβαλ ἦμαι ετβεναγ λγω ππααχε ετβεςωτή (Ch. 102)
   {NB: ετβε- in focus}

6. ερεθιμπαγτ ζως- μαγ ἱνομῆεσε ἵσσεπε (P 130.5 119 γο)
   {NB: ζως- in focus}

(d) Preterite:

1. μενζντειωσε ἱνωτ ημιτή (III 220)

2. ποι ενεγκαρνη (Ch. 83)
   {NB: ενεγ- relative (or circumstantial) preterite, qualifying ποι}

19.2 THE ADVERB PREDICATED IN THE EXISTENTIAL PRESENT: indefinite (indef. or zero article) nominal or pronominal theme

οὐν-ογρωμεν/ογα/ρωνε ημαγ "A man/someone is there"

μι-ογρωμεν/ογα/ρωνε ημαγ "No man/no one is there"

For Bibliography, see section 15.2

1. οὐνκεκοκον 2αρον ημαὶ (Orig. 303)
   [OBS. 2αρον η- instead of the prenominal form 2α-; 2αρον is treated as if containing an inherently possessed noun, which is combined with a nominal possessor by - q η-]

2. ημνροε εροι ... ογα ενκρίμα γιντςυναγωνη ετογας (III 133)

3. ημδαμ ημο επα (Or. 165)
   {NB: ημο- expresses in this extremely common turn of phrase the possession of the inherently-possessed ("inalienable") δαμ; similarly in the next text}

4. ογκογι τε λγω ημκιβε κοσ (Ch. 148 = Song of Songs 8:8)

5. μη ουναζο ηπειμα (III 72)

6. μημτορ ζωων εροτ ετβητον ημαζρπινυνύτε (A I 61)
   {NB: ετβητον = ετβητον}
19.2.1 THE ADVERB PREDICATED IN THE EXISTENTIAL PRESENT: CONVERSIONS (Tables Ea, G)

(a) Circumstantial ε-: εογν-εμνογρωμεν ἡμας "A man/no man being there" (also adnominal; 27-30); also ερεογρωμεν ἡμας
(b) Relative ετε-: ετεογν-ετεμνογρωμεν ἡμας "(...) where a man/no man is" (31-33); also ετεεογρωμεν ἡμας
(d) Preterite νε-: νεογν-νεμνογρωμεν ἡμας "A man/no man was there", also in hypothetical (remote) conditions (39-41)

For Bibliography, see section 15.2.1

(a) Circumstantial:
1. ὅγξαε εμμενοογν ἡντὴ (III 174)
2. γερωμεν νεινιετε εογντ εεοτε εεεε εεεεεεε εεεε εεεε εεεε εεεε (IV 95)

(b) Relative:
1. ἀκεζοον ετεογνψυχη νωμεν ἡντογν (RE 10 164)
2. πετεμπιπατ ἡμοοη (III 143)
3. πετεεοουχεν ἱτοοτη (Ryl. 67 p. 395)
4. πετενοουτε ετεογνβαλ ἡμοοη (Mun. 107)
5. πετεογνογον ερογ (A I 96)

(d) Preterite:
1. νεμπιπα δε ἡντογν (A I 37)

(*) 20 Non-situational adverbs, not predicated in the durative pattern are found as rhemes in the deificative Nominal Sentence or (for other 'tenses than the present and in a non-durative mode of action) introduced by means of the auxiliary Ι- into the tense-base conjugation.

(*) 20.1 THE ADVERB PREDICATED IN THE DELOCUTIVE NOMINAL SENTENCE PATTERN (see 3.2, 3.2.1)

# ADVERB (rheme) + νε, τε, νε + NOUN (theme) #

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
Till par. 248; *Shisha-Halevy par. 1.2.1.2
THE FORMAL-FUNCTIONAL SYSTEM

1. ἐπιθυμήσῃς ἡλικτε ἐὰν τε ἔτηγγυσάσων (IV 46)
2. ὡπαίημα τε δειννσ-ῃς ἄνδομη τήνῆμα (P 130.1135 333f.)
3. ἤτεις ὅν ἐνεθετετογώγας ἄνωγ (III 103)
   [OBS. ἤτεις is the adverb most common as rheme of the Nominal Sentence]
4. ἤτεις ὅν τε ἑυςίνε τῷ θανεἰ ένεταμεν ἐξευξαμοῦ εὐεντεχνή
   μῆνονταρεγές εὑσουν (IV 163f.)
5. καταπεμίνες τε πενείν ἅλεσάνη (Wess. 9 110)

(*) 20.2 THE ADVERB PREDICATED BY THE AUXILIARY ἕ-
      IN THE TENSE-BASE CONJUGATION (sections 6-11)

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
Shisha-Halevy par. 1.2.1.3

1. αμπαραφυσίς ἐπ-τίς (Wess. 9 171)
2. ακεγάτι ἐπ-ἐπος (IV 12)

21.1 # NOUN + ἦ-/νά- (“to”) # : modal possession or attribution
     (“... be to ...!”)

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
Vergote par. 183; Shisha-Halevy p. 37f.

1. οὔοει ἦν- “Woe unto ...!”

2. οὐοι  ναν ὧξαμακελεί (A II 374)
3. οὐοι ναν οοι νε ἰεπίπνεεω εβολ ἰπενήςη  ἰδενέκακα
   μῆναμα ἐπαν δητάτε ἰπνογύτε ἰπνώμαξ ἰπνεργάφη
   (III 199)
   {NB: να: 2nd sgl. fem.}
4. οὐοι ἰνζνάς νήν ἰρώμεν εἰναράπος αἱ ἐνεπροστάμα
   νέπνας (Wess. 9 160)
   [OBS. The adnominal circumstantial qualifying NOUN + НИМ shows
   НИМ to be quantifying-distributive rather than defining and to mean
   “any ...” rather than “all ...”]
5. οὔοει ἰνήθηκας-ηπερτόγνως ἐπιθυμήσῃς τῷ ἦνῃ
   (III 154)
   {NB: ἐπιθυμήσῃς see τούῳ =}
5. ὑγεῖον ἱππαῖα οὐσὲ ἡγεῖ να γαμάζῃ γραμμὴ ἐνήπτη (III 159)
6. ὑγεῖον οὐ τιλ ὑγεῖον ἱμιλεῖα ἤπασκα ἑτεροπαίωψυχὸν ἐνήπτου (A 11 39)

21.1.1 ὑγεῖ — CONVERTED

(a) Circumstantial ὑγεῖ —
(b) Relative ἑτερογεῖ —
(d) Preterite ὑγεῖ —

(a) Circumstantial:

1. σεκαλώσωσε ὑγεῖ οὐκ ἠδυ (IV 4)
   [OBS. ὕγεῖ as auxiliary supplies ὑγεῖ — with tense characteri-
   zations other than the present]
2. ἡδυ ἧγε τενοῦ ὑγεῖ οὐκ ἄν ἢντας ἰμπαρῆ ἐγαρὶ ἐπιγίζετι ἑτερογύν ἱκαλεῖ ἐβοὴ (A 11 155)
   {NB: this is the circumstantial replacing the Second Tense as the
   “that …” constituent in a Cleft Sentence, following the focus ἡδυ
   ἧγε "How (is it) that ...?"
   [OBS. On the circumstantial as the topic constituent in a Cleft
   Sentence, see Shisha-Halevy pp. 84-87]

(b) Relative:

1. ἐκαίρος ἑτερογεῖ οὐκ ἡπτή (IV 94)
2. ὑγεῖ οὐκ ἄν ἦθε ἑτερογεῖ ἤιπε δεικογε (A 11 11)

(d) Preterite:

1. ἵππαῖα ὑγεῖ οὐκ ἀκαλκοπὴ ὤκ ἐπιμοφ ἢπῆ (Wess. 9 142)
2. ὑγεῖον οὐκ πε ἐτεροπειατότε φαίνετ τὴ (IV 94)
   {NB: ἐτεροπειατότε relative of ἤιατ — “blessed is ...” (section
   23.1)}

21.2 ἵππαῖα — "Glory be to ..."

This modal-future predication of possession is a text-final fixed formula.

1. περὶ ἰκ πενθοκείων παί ἵππαῖα ἤιπς ἤιπες ἤιας (III 224)
   [OBS. παί ἵππαῖα ἤιπς "He, to whom ..." — there is no relative
   conversion of this pattern]
2. κεκαλλαπέ ὁς τε ἵππαῖα ἤιπ ἤπε δεικογε ἐτεροπειαλα (Wess. 9 146)
3. ἵππαῖα ἰκερικαὶ ἑτοίμασα εἰσωττ ἤπω δεικογε ἤπε δεικογε ἐνηπτήγο οθηρή ὤκ ἦιπε δεικογε (IV 197)
UNIT (VI): SYNTHETIC CONJUGATION FORMS WITH SUFFixed SUBJECT: PRESENT TENSE, NARRATIVE PAST (sections 22-26)

22 THE ADJECTIVE VERBS
22.1 The PRESENT: the Adjective Verb ṃanoγ -q “(He) is good, fair”
22.2 The PRESENT: the Adjective Verb ṃawō -q “(They) are numerous” “(He) is plentiful”
22.3 The PRESENT: the Adjective Verb ṃaaz -q “(He) is great”
22.4 The PRESENT: the Adjective Verb nećw -q “(He) is beautiful/ugly”
22.5 The Adjective Verbs converted

23 The PRESENT: naaγt -q “Blessed is (he)”
23.1 naaγt -q converted

24 The PRESENT: (e)azna -q “(He) is willing”
24.1 (e)azna -q converted
24.2 azna - “be willing” in various conjugation forms outside the present

25 meψa - “(You) do not know”, “perhaps” (in the generic 2nd person sgl. masc.): AORIST

26 neψa -q “(He) said:” PAST NARRATIVE, introducing direct speech

22 THE PRESENT: ADJECTIVE VERBS or “conjugated adjectives” (Table H):

This is a formal group made up of five or six synthetic conjugation forms, all beginning with ne- or na-, all having their theme-“actor” (noun or pronoun) attached at the end, all predicing a present quality of the theme (they are thus, in a functional sense, complementary to the durative present predicing the stative, 16.1-2). They are main-clause
forms, fully convertible and negated by ... an. Some have a special prenominal alternant form distinct from the one preceding the suffix pronoun theme; the nominal theme, introduced by ἄν-, may follow the 3rd person pronominal one.

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
Stern parr. 308-310; Steindorff parr. 297; Till parr. 284; Vergote parr. 169; Lambdin parr. 29.2; Polotsky, ‘‘Conjugation System’’ parr. 36

22.1 The ADJECTIVE VERB ἀναγος- q ‘‘(He) is good, fair’‘: ἀναγος-/ἀναγ- (anag-)
1. ἐσχεναι ἀναγοι κοινωνινὶ ἀναι ἐσχεναι ἀναγοι ἀν ἅπερκοινωνινὶ (III 30)
2. ἀναγοντηνουρτω ἀμερατε (III 27)
3. ἀναγονεκεκιβε ἀναγε ἀηριπ (III 53)
4. ἀναγος ἄν ἐμον ἀναγο ἐὼς ἡμερολισ (Wess. 9 174)
   [OBS. ἀναγ-, with the neutric feminine ‘‘it’‘, is common for ‘‘it were better that...’‘ and the like; it is then complemented by the infinitive or by ἥπερκοτ (section 9.1 b)]
5. ἀναγος ἀε ἔσπευς ἔνες ἦς ἡμως ἡμερολισ (P 30.2 102 22)
6. ἀναγονπας ἄνωκ ἐτεκκληςία ἄνπναντε ἀναγονθνεῖς ἀναγοντῆς ἄνεκταγε ἄνοκ ἐτεκκληςίν ἀναγος ἀς ἄν ἀντεῖς ἄνανκαισ ἀν ἀναγογωμ ἀναγονθάνος ἀε ἀε (IV 174f.)
7. ἀναγονειςροου ἄν εὑρωστι ἐρου (Wess. 9 87)

22.2 The ADJECTIVE VERB ἄνω- q ‘‘(They) are numerous’‘, ‘‘(He) is plentiful’‘: ἄνω-/ἀνω-
1. ἄνωεκεκλοοε (III 31)
2. ἄνωεντηνουγε ἑτοοον ἄν ἐνθε ἔν ἄνωεννουγ ἄνωεντα ἄνωεγγυναρχοντα τῆρον (IV 22)
3. ἄνωογον ἄν ἐξαργος (III 115)
   [OBS. ἄνω- ἄν- is post-classic, a by-construction for the Scripture Coptic ἄνω-]
4. ἄνω ἄν ἐπιτακεκε ἑτοοον ἔνθε ἡμερονας τῆρον (III 179)
5. ἀγαπῶ γὰρ χίνηστρη ῥαγινὴ ἐκεῖνοι ἦδισενεῖοτε ἐπεμνύτε σοῦμοι (IV 28)
6. ἀγαπῶ γὰρ ἦδιενταγρψῆνο ἐπεμνύτε (E 83)

22.3 The ADJECTIVE VERB ἃγαρ "(He) is great": ἃγαρ

1. ἡ καρδιὰν ἐχεῖ ἃγαρ ζησακάς ἐκτέθεπτα (III 72)
2. παῖστ ἃγαρ ἐροι (Orig. 807)

22.4 The ADJECTIVE VERB ἅσσω & ἅςω "(He) is beautiful/ugly"

1. ἅσσω θυγάρ εἶνατ φίλαπτωμα ἣν αγρι.-πετάγε ἑρο ἅσσω τὸ ῥεῖθροθ ὑγάρ ἄγριπετάγε ἑρο ἑμμοῦτ (A I 374)
2. σικοσμεὶς ἅσσω (IV 189)
3. ἅσσοςεγκομὸς (Zoega p. 600)
4. ἅσσω τἀγάμερ ἐλεήμοντε ἅσσω (III 52)
5. ἐλεήμοντε ἄγαρ ἅγαρ ἅσσω ἅσσω ἑδμή ἑρο (III 53)

22.5 THE ADJECTIVE VERBS CONVERTED (see Tables H, G)

(a) Circumstantial ἐλανοῦ = "(He) being good": usually adnominal (27-30)
(b) Relative ἐλανοῦ = "who is good", "whose ... is good" (31-33)
(c) Second Tense ἐλανοῦ = "(It is ...) that (he) is good" (34-38)
(d) Preterite ἐλανοῦ = "(He) was (/used to be) good", also in hypothetical (remote) condition (39-41)

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
Stern par. 311, 405, 408; Steindorff par. 374, 461; Till par. 284; Vergote par. 171; Lambdin par. 29.2; Polotsky, "Conjugation System" par. 37

(a) Circumstantial:
1. ὁγγω ἐλανοῦ (Ch. 37)
2. ὁγγω ἁρπα ἐλαγγω (Wess. 9 165)
3. ζενάβηξε ενανογού ἁν (P 131.7 40 ῥο)
4. μὴ ἔσεσθε οὖν εναλάλα επετναύσωμεν ἰνεταζήσανος (III 222)
5. γενὴμενοοῦ ενασώμω (III 164)
6. γενὴ ενεκσώμων ἀγω ενανογού (P 130.2 7 89)
7. οὐγείωτον οὐ μονον δεξαμενα κατετληκτὸ νῆσος ετεφεείρε-
    ἄλα εφραγοῖε-νε ἰνομος ἀγω εφο ναυ ἦσιβ-ογοῖς γίσεω
    εφοι εληνι γαλεπονῖ οὔε ἰνοψῖρος η οἰγον ενασηνετ-
    εσωμεν ἰνογού (Ch. 170)

(b) Relative:
1. πως ετνανογυ (Wess. 9 167)
2. πως ετεθαπτεφημε (IV 19)
3. τετηγαμα εναλάλα ερούν εροι (III 13)
4. ἀγ οἰ πκεδωντ ἀγῳ πκεκηραγνες εναλαλα εἰποι (Ch. 122f.)
5. λοι ενεκσωμον μεν ἰνεποβολ γησούν δε οὐγαθων πε
    ετθαοοο ερογο εταγοο (IV 3)
6. πως εὕαεες εν ετνεβωφ (Wess. 9 110)
7. πεκε ετεπαφεπανα (RE 11 16)
8. τροειτε ἰνετηνηκε ενεκσωσογοντε (IV 162)
9. τεβω νηοειτε ενεκσωκ εναγ ερος (Ch. 152)
10. ἰνεπταλαλα ερος (Ch. 135f.)
    {NB: εροε comparative: "than Himself"
(c) Second Present:
1. εὐχενανογενεσξηρε ωιμ ἀν εγκω ϊνωμον ἰνεπεπωακε
    ενανογυτην ινου ιτωιετε ετετιτστο εβολ ινωγι (IV 96)
    {NB: ινος in focus}
2. παντως εναπα τηπηταιο ἰνεοοο (Orig. 807)
    {NB: εναπα = εναπαη; τη- in focus}
3. τηπηνο ενεαλαλα ενεγερηγυ (Ch. 135)
    {NB: τηπηνο in focus}
    [OBS. This may be a case of the circumstantial and not Second
    Tense conversion; the circumstantial is used as the "that..." consi-
    stuent of a Cleft Sentence after its focus: see Shisha-Halevy pp. 87-
    94]
(d) Preterite:
1. ενεδεψωμεν ετηπεκτο εβολ (III 27)
2. γαεων οηοογ ενεδεψενεξητιο γηπεξοε (Ch. 124)
3. οὐγίγας ἔρωμε νεκάνωσον εἰμίτε ἔπατογαρχεῖ εἰςεθεί 

4. εἰσενάξωσον τὸν ἔκνεμεναρείαν ... ἐνοικεῖ οὐκ ἐν ἴσοια 

(NB: this is the circumstantial preterite, ἐνε- used as the supposi-tion of a remote hypothetical condition ("irrealis"))

23. THE PRESENT: ἴαιτα-τ "Blessed is (he)"

BIBLIOGRAPHY:

STERN par. 198; TILL par. 284 Obs.; VERCOTE par. 183

1. ἴαιταυ τὸν ἐνεκταγόμονεν ἔκνεμαμον ὦγοι ἐς ἐνε-

2. ὦγοι ἐνεκταγόμονε ἔζεσαμον ... ἴαιταυ οὐ ἐνε-

(NB: ἐνεκταγόμονος indefinite nominalized relative of the Adjective Verb �ereo-

3. ἴαιταυ ἐνεκταγόμονε ἔζεσαμον ... ἴαιταυ οὐ 

4. νακίκαιος ἐνταγοῦν ἴταμαυν ἐνταγετείματε 

5. ἴαιτα φωνεῖον ἴαιτα τὸν ἐνοικεῖον ... ὦγοι 

(NB: ἐτας "be/become as")

23.1 ἴαιτα- CONVERTED (Table G)

(a) Circumstantial ἴαιτα-τ "He being blessed" (28.1)
(b) Relative ἴαται-τ "that (he) is blessed" (31.2)
(c) Second Tense ἴατα-τ "... (It is ...) that (he) is blessed" (34.1)

(a) Circumstantial:

1. ὦγοι ἐν ἴσοια ἐκάλαμει ἴαταυ εὐτατοῦ ἐνεκταγίας (A II 374) 
[OBS. ἐτας reinforcer: "they, on the other hand"]

(b) Relative:

1. τι τε ἐτας ἴαταυ ἐνεκταγόμοναργαρής ἴταμα 

(ILL 68)
(c) Second Tense:

1. ἐναιατὰ γὰρ ἂν ἢπετκαθηκεὶ ἤεαξὶ ἢγεσώιαις οὐγενέται ἡμοοῆ ἡλεγούσωτι ἐνεγάπαξ ἁλλὰ ἐναιατὰ ἢπετκαθηκεὶ ἢπεσάμερες ἐνεταξὶ ἡ-

{NB: the Second Tense puts the ἢe- clauses in focus: “It is because... that...”, “It is not because... that...”}

24 THE PRESENT: (ε)ἐναξ- q "(He) wishes", "(He) is willing"

Negatived: (ν-)ἐναξ = ἀν

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
Stern par. 198; Steindorff par. 295(4); Till par. 283; Vergote par. 170(6); Polotsky Rev. Till p. 231f.

1. ἂανθως ἐγναγ ἂν ἐπελεὰς ἐρωμε ἰακαριζε ἢμοογ ἐπητρὶ (III 161)
2. ἐγναν ετ ὦντι ἦπεγαγεὶς ἦποιγοτε ἲματε ἂν ἁλλα ἦπεκσθαύει (Ch. 109)
3. εξ ἐκκ ο π ἐγναν εκβάπηλε ἐβεβεβε ἐβαθτε ἦπετ-

{NB: ἐγνα 2nd sgl. fem. person}

24.1 (ε)ἐναξ CONVERTED

(a) Circumstantial εναξ- q "(he) being willing/unwilling" (also
adnominal; 27-30)
(b) Relative ἐτεσὶ ἐναξ- "who is willing", "what (He) wishes" (31-33)

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
Stern par. 407; Till par. 198, 468, 483; Vergote par. 171, p. 225

(a) Circumstantial:

1. ἀνταὶ ἀοοογ ἠαρωτὶ ἢπεικεκοπ ἐγναγ ἁν (P 130.1 131
328)
2. ἅναξ ἀἐ ἂκ ἢπεισώιῃς ἐγναὶ ἃν ἐσοος (A II 191)
3. αγι εφωπε ηετναγ ηετεεεε εξηεηεηουη ηεγουη εροι ετεεεεεεεε εαξηαεη ηεγαη η ηηοη εητεηζεη αν 
τε ... (ΙΙΙ 131)
4. εγηεηννηηγηεη ιηαι ηηηηη ηηεηεηηηεκνει η ηηοη ηε 
ογα εη ηαηεηζεη η εηηηηη ογηεηζεη ηηηεηηγη ηηηεηηη αηοηεηη ηεηοηεηη νηη ηεγαη αη ηε 
εηζεη ι εηεκ ηηηηη ι ηεηζηηε ... (IV 50)
5. ετεηεηεηηηγαη ηηεηπε ηεκαηηγηηη ηηη ηεγαη (Α I 2)

(b) Relative:
1. πηεε αεεη αη (Ε 69)
2. πεεηηεη εηζεη (ΒΜ 8810 π. 391)
3. ηηε εεεηεη (ΙΙΙ 82)
4. τεηηηε ηηεηπε εεεη ιηαι αη ηεζεη (Α I 61)
5. πεεηηηη αη ιεαςη αη ιεαςη αη ιεαςη ιεαςη ιεαςη (Ορι. 365)

24.2 "πηεη" "be willing" in various conjugation forms outside the present

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
Till par. 283 Obs.; Vergote par. 170(6); Lmbdin par. 20.2(4); Polotsky, Rev. 
Till p. 231f., "Conjugation System" p. 402

1. αγιηεη αεεεηπε εηο ηεζηηαη (ΙV 29)
2. ηεηηαηαη αη ηεε ιεζαη (ΙΙI 200)
3. ηεεηηεηηηηη ιεηαη (Α I 278)
4. πηεη ι ογηπε (Α I 83)
   (NB: πηεη and ογηπε are imperatives)
5. ογηηκεηηκεηη ιεηαηαη ηηηπεηηζεηης ιεηαη ιεζαη (P 130.2 104)
6. ηηηηεηηηη ιεηαη εηηη ιεηη (Ch. 142)
7. ηηηηεηηη ιεε ιεζαη ι εηα ιεηηη εηηη (ΙΙI 200)
   (NB: 2nd person sgl. fem. actor and possessor; εηα for εηα)

25. ηεηαρ "(He) does not know"; in the generic 2nd person sgl. 
masc., ηεηαρ "perhaps"

Rarely also in the relative conversion: εεεεηαη -
**BIBLIOGRAPHY:**
Stern parr. 268, 527; Steindorff parr. 295(2); Till parr. 285; Vergote parr. 170(2)

1. άνω το νου - είναι εύ - ένα το εύ (Wess. 9 66)
   {NB: είνα - Second Future, putting ου in focus: “What is it I shall say”}

2. άνω το νου είναι ένα είναι εύ - είναι εύ - ένα εύ - είναι εύ (III 48)
   {NB: εύ - Second Aorist}

3. άνω το νου είναι ένα εύ (A 176)
   {NB: 2nd person sgl. fem. actor}

4. (Even if he does not give alms to the poor because of his callousness or misanthropy.) άνω το νου είναι εύ - είναι εύ (III 65)

5. άνω το νου είναι εύ (Wess. 9 164)
   {NB: ου = εύ - circumstantial neg. perfect}

6. άνω το νου είναι εύ - είναι εύ - είναι εύ - είναι εύ (IV 72)
   {NB: εύ = άνω είναι circumstantial}

7. άνω το νου είναι εύ - είναι εύ - είναι εύ - είναι εύ (BL 8800 (A) fol. 6 ro)

8. άνω το νου είναι εύ - είναι εύ - είναι εύ - είναι εύ (Leyd. 411)
   {NB: άνω 2nd sgl. fem.}

9. άνω το νου είναι εύ - είναι εύ - είναι εύ - είναι εύ (IF apud Dict. 201)

26. άνω το νου NARRATIVE PAST: “(He) said ...”, introducing speech or quotation, especially dialogue-in-narration

άνω το νου may open, conclude or be inserted parenthetically in the reported speech. When initial, it is followed by άνω το νου.

**BIBLIOGRAPHY:**
Stern parr. 308-311; Steindorff parr. 294; Till parr. 282; Vergote parr. 170(1); Lambdin parr. 20.3

1. άνω το νου είναι εύ - είναι εύ - είναι εύ - είναι εύ - είναι εύ - είναι εύ - είναι εύ - είναι εύ (Ch. 17)

2. άνω το νου είναι εύ - είναι εύ - είναι εύ - είναι εύ - είναι εύ - είναι εύ - είναι εύ - είναι εύ (A 1 38)

3. είναι εύ - είναι εύ - είναι εύ - είναι εύ - είναι εύ - είναι εύ - είναι εύ - είναι εύ (III 44)
4. ἐνώσατε οὕτω πεκαρὶ (III 118)
5. ἐνεχείμνξετε λαῷ ἱεράς ἁρπαζόντα σελαῖς ὡτε ἑκύρυξεν ὡτοπτὶ
       ἢτειογυη (III 111)
6. ἔμηργῳ ἔρθε ἐκαλεῖς ἰερεύνας πεκαράεις πνούτε (Ch. 169)
7. πεκαρὶ γαρ ἑβίπλαπτοστολος ἱεραὶ ετεπεγνύτε πε
       ἐγνῶ (Ch. 110)
8. ἰκογύς ἐκεῖ πε ἀπα πρὸ πε πεκαρὶ ἱερῶν ἀκταγε
       ἰκεκροῦεν ὁ ἱεράτη ἐγνῶ πε πεκαρὶ ἱερῶν πεκαρ
       ἱερεῖ ὡν ὁ πε πεκαρὶ ἱεροῦ επε τῷ σκε ἰεραείς (Ch. 105)
9. πεκαρ iota-ῖτανεψαλσε ἵκωκ ἔγνω (Wess. 9 90)
     {NB: ἰτανεψαλσε Second Perfect, putting ἔγνω in focus}
10. πεκαρολὴ ἑγὼ βιετέβεογ ἁπαὶ ἡ ἡ ἀπὸ ἱεβολ ἢτει
        ἑρωὶ (A 1 60)
11. πεκαρ ἰκογύς ἱερὰπραμαξε ἓμμαν ἔγνωθι (A 1 74)
     {NB: 2nd sgl. fcm. actor}
SECOND PART (Units I-IV)
TOPICS OF ADVANCED SYNTAX

UNIT I: CONVERSION (sections 27-41)
UNIT II: THE CONJUNCTIVE (sections 42-43)
UNIT III: CONDITIONAL COMPLEXES (sections 44-48)
UNIT IV: THE INFINITIVE OUTSIDE CONJUGATION (sections 49-51)
UNIT (I): CONVERSION

(A) THE CIRCUMSTANTIAL CONVERSION: ADNOMINAL (ADNEXAL), ADVERBAL, PREMODIFYING

27.1 Indefinite/zero noun, indef. pronoun expanded by the circumstantial (ADNOMINAL circumstantial)
27.2 Non expressing time expanded by the circumstantial (ADNOMINAL circumstantial)
27.3 A noun/personal pronoun *predicatively* expanded by the circumstantial (ADNOMINAL ADNEXAL circumstantial)

28.1 A clause followed (expanded) by the circumstantial (MODIFIER ["adverbial"] circumstantial)
28.2 A verb of incomplete predication ("descriptive verb") expanded by the circumstantial (ADVERBAL ADNEXAL circumstantial, as *predicative complement*)
28.3 The circumstantial preceding the main clause (PREMODIFYING circumstantial)

29.1 The circumstantial carrying on a relative or preterite conversion

30 Some special thematic roles of the circumstantial

(A) THE CIRCUMSTANTIAL CONVERSION:

ε- + clause (conjugation form or Nominal Sentence): see Table G

The adnominal circumstantial expands (qualifies, describes) an indefinite noun or pronoun or a nominal expression of time or occasion (27.1-2).

The adnexal circumstantial expands and adjoins a predicate (rheme) to a definite or indefinite noun or any pronoun, which is thus expanded predicatively (27.3).

The modifier or adverbial circumstantial expands a clause, modifying it by referring it circumstantially or both predicatively and circumstantially to an act or state (28.1-2).
27.1 INDEFINITE/ZERO-DET. NOUNS or INDEFINITE PRO- 
OUNS EXPANDED BY THE CIRCUMSTANTIAL (adnominal 
circumstantial): “a man who . . .”, “one who . . .”

The relative converter does not occur as an expansion (qualification, 
description) of indefinite nouns or pronouns: the circumstantial is the 
form found in this role.

1. ὁ γάρ εὑρετῷ ἐναναγῇ εὑρεῖν ἥπερ (IV 29)
2. ἧραπαρθένος ἦνόσ ἐν ἐκτοστὶ ἂ ἠνεγυγαγῇ ἠμεγυλα-


3. οἶνῳ εὐχορῶ (IV 154)
   [NB: the zero-det. feminine noun is resumed by a masculine 
pronoun in the circumstantial form; in fact, the zero article is 
resumed, not the lexeme: zero is resumed by the masculine as a 
gender-indifferent (“neuter”) form. See SHISHA–HALEVY, Chapter 5]
4. καὶ ὁ ἑρμήν εὐβαλ (III 93)
5. ὁ γνωσῶμε εἰναξάοσ εὐγοῦτε πε (Wess. 9 168)
   {OBS. εὐγοῦτε “fearsome” (“one of fear”): see POLOTSKY, “Nominal-
satz und Cleft Sentence” p. 418f., SHISHA–HALEVY p. 142ff.}
6. ἠγαθοῦ ἀναγωμ. ἐναγάγῃ ἀν ἐνακαθοῦ (Ch. 33)
7. οἴνῳ εὐξών εὐξίπαντε εὐχής ἠ μᾶκεζων εὐχίξειλπαν 
   (III 44)
8. ξρέα άν οἴνῳ εὑρίσκε (III 71)
9. ὁ ἑρμήν ἐνε ἐν αἰρέσα ἐνετεύ ἠμοι ἀν ἱπόνοβε 
   πε (III 201)
   {NB: ε-αιρε- a variant 2nd sgl. fem. form of the circum. 
perfect)
10. ἄετετεύενε εὐξώναμον ἄετετασταῖον ἀν (Leid. 296Γ)
    {NB: ἄετετα- = ἄετετα-}
11. ζοίνε εὐχρηστῶν ἀν ἑνεπτογράφω ενατε ενηκοογε 
    εἰναυτίς εὐγοῖ (III 44)
12. οὐς εὐκβατ ἀμοῦμανε εὐγοῦρῳ ἄνομον (IV 94)
27.2 Nouns expressing time or occasion expanded by the circumstantial (adnominal circumstantial): "the time when..."

1. ημιξανον ενσωγογε νηλαν ναν (Ch. 156)
2. τεισομενα ημοιον εντοιε ενπε (III 37)
3. ημηναγ ενειρε νησων μη μηκακιοεγγυμ (IV 102)
4. πενον η πεσονον ενσωγον εεομε (A I 123)
   [OBS. Contrast the stative here ("when we are gathered") with the
    infinitive in text 1 ("as we gather")]
5. πεσον ενεγγαντεν (Ch. 83)
   [NB: ενεγγ- circumstantial (or relative?) imperfect: section 39.1.1]
6. ημηναγ ετεταλκοροσ ηνοονος (Orig. 372)
7. πνευμωμεν ηνοον εαμεθα εηραί ενεφαν ηνωμε εεογ-
   ασ (Orig. 347)

27.3 A noun or personal pronoun predicatively expanded by the circumstantial (adnexal circumstantial): "(I found) him/the man/a man sitting". The noun/pronoun is normally an object of a verb or adjoined to another noun by means of η-.

1. αηκαλαγ εσον (Ch. 32)
2. καν γαρες εμπελοες ηπεξε εγογοε (III 115)
   [NB: γαρες imperative]
3. τιναν ερον εηταλκορος ηπωτ (RE 10 164)
4. ηογωμογ εγογασ (IV 97)
5. ηνηαν αν εηπηρη ηηε εηπαγεροη εηκατε ηεκτε
   ταχη (Wess. 9 140)
   [NB: a rhetorical question]
6. ηετειεξω ηενογ εειλαγ (III 25)
7. αηοηεν ηες εεγη ... (III 21)
8. εεηαενε ηενηη ετηνηαγ εεπηρκη (III 141)
9. γηηηηας ηηεοενεη ηηηηας ηηρη εηπαπηρη (III 87)
10. ηεν εηεες εενον γηεδαμ τε ηηω εεηεηε ηεδαμ γηεδωβ
    ηηε (Leyd. 347f.)
11. ηεν εηενογεμ- αη ηηρπ γηεδωηε εηενεγηααγ ηηηογ
    τηολ (III 177)
28.1 A CLAUSE EXPANDED BY THE CIRCUMSTANTIAL
(modifier or “adverbial” circumstantial): “He came here wishing to
speak to me”, also resolved in English into “.../as/when/while/although
he wished...”.

NB: the practical difference between the adverbial, adnexual and adnominal
roles of the circumstantial is at times tenuous and their distinction
difficult.

1. ἀφευξαθεὶς ἤναιε ἐφογωθεὶς ἐρβολ (III 39)
2. ἤναταμοθεὶς ἡσφυμένη ἄν (Ch. 103)
3. μεσακε ἀκαρασεὶς ἄνοιμος ἐκβίθωσιν ἐμπιειμέ (III 139)
4. ὦγχαί να ἁνεμερίτ ἥειστ ἐτσκαμάστ ἐκείρε ἦπεν-

[NB: The circumstantial Nominal Sentence has typically an adver-
sative meaning: “whereas”, “although”]
5. ἕγερσάνοιε ἐγάθν ἁνος ἠκατακατε ἐσοῦταγγαγα ἄνω

6. (I 135)
7. ἀπονοτε να ἀνοσόηκασ ἄγατ ἄν ἅνεμψανο (IV 27)
[BNS. A narrative-continuative use of the circumstantial perfect]
8. ἄνος ἐφαγείδομε ἐροογ ἢγκάταγατ ἔναβυλβα (Ch. 76)
9. ἄγηστο ἥνοτι εἰς ἠποσ ἄνοιμος ἡσφυμε Σωτάραπος (III 145)
10. ἀγοῦ糜 ἄνοις ἄνος ἐποπταὶς ἡπός ἡκτίς συν

{NB: Cleft Sentence (“It is a single ... that I have”), section 33}
11. ἐκταμάστ ἐκταμάστ ἄγαν ἐκταμάστ ἠπεκτας ἀντα-

[OBS. This may alternatively be interpreted as an instance of the
adnexual circumstantial, predicatively expanding the first person
singular object pronoun]
12. Ἁντεκτι αὐτοὶ ἀροὶ εἰς ἄνοις (Ch. 102)

13. ἓνο ἐποτας ἡμῖν ἔγγοτε ἤπεος ἢνὰ ἕκε ἕπεσαμεν

14. ἔγερσαν ἐγάθν ἅπαντε ἀποπείρα ἐγάθνος ἄνος ἄνος ἔγγο-

(Ch. 99)
15. ἑνοματε ἐκταμάστ ἐκταμάστ ἠπεκτας ἀντα-

(II 395)
16. ἑνοματε ἐγάθνος ἄνοις ἄνοις ἄνοις ἔγγοτε ἕπεσαμεν
28.2 A VERB OF INCOMPLETE PREDICATION (“DESCRIPTIVE VERB”) EXPANDED BY THE CIRCUMSTANTIAL (adnexal adverbal circumstantial, “predicative complement”): “He stopped speaking”. The circumstantial present is the normal form with most descriptive verbs.

NB: (1) Note especially the use of the verb ὑψάμ “come into being” “happen, take place” which, followed by the circumstantial as a predicative complement, is used suppletively, to combine various tenses with the durative pattern, Nominal Sentence or existential statements.

(2) The verb ὤγω means “have already done” when occurring in a main clause conjugation form, “finish doing” when in a dependent-clause form.

1. εἰγερμός εἰγερμόριϑ ὕψευσθη αὐτῷ ... (others) εἰγερμός εἰγερμόριϑ ἔνοικε αὐτῷ ἔτηκεν (III 155f.)
2. τὴν κατὰ τὴν γενεανοῦ ἄνδρα τοῦ ἔναυσα (III 158)
3. Ἡνίοχος ἔργα ἔργα ἔργα οἰκίης (A II 61)
4. ἔργα ἐτεντεῖτω ἐπονοτε (A II 27)
5. αὐτὰ ἅπα πρὸς τὴν αὐτοῦ ἐνοικία ἐνοικία ἐνοικία ἐνοικία (Ch. 93)
6. Ἡνίοχος ἔκρυβε ἡμᾶς ἡμᾶς ἡμᾶς ἡμᾶς ἡμᾶς (A II 503)
7. Ἡνίοχος ἐν εἰς ἐν ἐς ἐς ἐς ἐς ἐς (Rossi 2/3 43)
8. ἄντε μέρος ἐνοικία ἐνοικία ἐνοικία (P 130.4 99 vo)
9. Ἡνίοχος ἀκούει ἐνοικία ἐνοικία ἐνοικία (III 20)
10. ἐγνατίος ἐγνατίος ἐγνατίος ἐγνατίος ἐγνατίος (IV 63)
11. ἐγνατίος ἐγνατίος ἐγνατίος ἐγνατίος ἐγνατίος ἐγνατίος ἐγνατίος (IV 69)
12. Ἡνίοχος ἐκρύπτει ἡμῖν ἡμῖν ἡμῖν ἡμῖν ἡμῖν ἡμῖν ἡμῖν (Rossi 2/3 71)
13. Ἡνίοχος ἐγνατίος ἐγνατίος ἐγνατίος (Wess. 9 132)
14. ἐγνατίος ἐγνατίος ἐγνατίος ἐγνατίος ἐγνατίος ἐγνατίος (IV 41)
15. ἡμῖν ἡμῖν ἡμῖν ἡμῖν ἡμῖν ἡμῖν ἡμῖν (III 138)

28.3 THE CIRCUMSTANTIAL PRECEDING THE MAIN CLAUSE (premodifier circumstantial): “Even though he could not work, he came with us”, “As long as you are here”, “I feel safe”.

1. εἰσελθός εἰσέλθη ἐνεπέταμ ἡμᾶς ἡμᾶς ἡμᾶς ἡμᾶς ἡμᾶς ἡμᾶς (III 44)

   (NB: πετάω ο- definite relative present: “the one who...”)
2. πετεύσωνε εὐγήσων ἤμοιον εἰς μαρκη (IV 78)
3. ἐκείπτε γὰρ ἤτιοι καινόθεσι κάθετος ἐρωκ (III 145)
4. ἐκκολείκ μεν ἑπρωμε εὑσπεπάνανοντὸ ἤμακκας
   νὰ ἁντιπάρκει τῷ (III 43)
5. καὶ εἶπεκακαὶ ἐν ἑτέρῳ ἑρποῖ ἠμαρτῆν ἡ
   τετακάσιμο εὐπεπεμακα (Α 1 131)
6. ετεπεῖναε ἔσπερο ἐμοὶ ἦτογον ἔμαρτᾷ ἔργον-
   τᾶς ἦμογμε (Wess. 9 141)
7. εὐκατὶ βε ἤνομη ἐμοὶ ἠμαρτίναυντε ἅμα ἦμαρτῃ ἦμετέρ
   στεγήμνην εὐκατοσ (Ch. 85)
8. ὄταν εὐπεπεμ-εὐρομε εὐκατοσὶ ἠμαρτήμε
   εὐκατοσ-ογέτε (Ch. 72)
   {NB: ὄταν εὐπα: "Whenever"; εὐκατ- Second Aorist,
   putting ἦμ in focus}
9. ἑπρωμε εὐκατοσὶ ἠμαρτήμε ἦμαρτν τό ἔμαρτν (BM 8800 3 10)
10. ἦμοτον εὐεκτῆ εὐθον ἦμαρτὼν ἔμαρτν (Ch. 70)
11. ἦμοτον εὐκατοσ ἠμαρτίναυντε ἦπερτρεπτῶ ἦτεχαρισ (IV 24)

29. THE CIRCUMSTANTIAL CARRYING ON A RELATIVE OR
   PRETERITE CONVERSION

1. πὴν ἑτεμήνταμαλλαγ οὐδε εὐθεῖα αὐ τὰ ἠμαρτ
   νῶμορ (Rossi 2/3 70)
2. πετογοντ ἐμοὶ τὴν ἠμαρτήμε εὐθεῖαν ἠμαρτε
   νὸ τὴν ἠμαρτήμε (RE 10 161)
   {NB: this is addressed discourse}
3. ἠμαρτῶντε ἑτεμίνθαλ ἠμοῦ ἠμενα τὸ ἐμοὶ ἠμαρτ
   νῶμορ ἠμενα τὸ ἐμοὶ ἠμαρτέ (Mun. 107)
4. ἐν προφήτῃ ἠμοῦ ἠμαρτε ἠμαρτε ἠμαρτε ἠμαρτ
   νῶμορ (III 171)
5. ἐν ἑπειώτ ἠμαρτίναυντε ἐμαρτηθήτε ἦμαρτν (IV 129)
6. ἐνταξάκαν ἠ ἐγκεντρὰ τε ἐκ ἠμενατα (Wess. 9 113)
7. ἑπεισ ἠμαρτήτε ἐπίκοι ἠμαρτήτε ἦμαρτν (Ch. 161)
8. ἱντταμε ἐν ἐνταμα (Α 1 53)
9. ἑπεισ ἑναυαντ ἠμαρτή ἠ ἐγκεντρὰ ἠμαρτν (III 86)
(*)30. SOME SPECIAL THEMATIC ROLES OF THE CIRCUM-STANTIAL

The circumstantial is used as theme (subject) in certain special Cleft Sentence ("It is... that.../who...") patterns, in which it marginally overlaps with the relative topic (see section 33). The focus, invariably initial in this pattern, is either an adverbial or a nominal syntagm.

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
*Shisha-Halevy, chap. 2, par. 2.5

1. ογρωμενε πε πεξαι εουηναται ομαν ρογωμενε αγω ρωερε, 
   σιτε (III 96)
   {OBS. This is a narrative (here parable) opening role of the Cleft 
   Sentence; cf. Lc. 15:11}
2. ετβεξαι ρω εαπξοεις αεετωογ ιαιε ιρομπε (III 133)
3. και ιαε τενογ εογοι αν ιεντεςκ ιιενερηγ εξεϊ 
   εινιειτ ετιιαι ικακε γιδοςι (A II 155)
4. ιαι ιηε ιακαξε ειανκοογ αγω ιακαςογ ετεπενεξνο 
   ιπεωσθρ αγω τεγιιηνηνοτε (Cal. 42)
5. και ιαε εουηνενε εαν αν πε (Miss. 278)
6. οιιρ ιιαλα ειεετεια ... ερειερε ιινοογ (III 199)
7. ιαντεογ βε ρωμε ενεκτε εαν ιπκωςοι ινζενενα 
   (Rossi 2/3 43)
   {NB: ιαντεογ ρωμε, followed by the circumstantial, is the 
   Coptic idiom corresponding to "Until when...?" (ογ "what?")}
(B) THE RELATIVE CONVERSION: ADNOMINAL
(ATTRIBUTIVE)

31.1 The antecedent: definite article, demonstrative pronoun: DETERMINATID (definite) RELATIVE
31.1.1 The formal antecedent π-: NOMINALIZED ("lexemic") RELATIVE: "one who"
31.2 Antecedent: definite noun syntagm

32 The relative conversion carried on

33 The Cleft Sentence with relative topic and pronominal/nominal focus
"It is he/the man who (whom) ..."
33.1 The focus: noun syntagm, determinated relative, demonstrative and interrogative pronouns
33.2 The focus: personal pronoun
33.2 The Cleft Sentence converted

ετὲ- / ετ-, ετὲ-, ετέρὲ- / ετέ̀-, ἡτ- / ἢ- + clause: Table G

The relative conversion marks an adnominal attributive status of the clause (e.g., marks the clause as expanding and describing a noun or pronoun): it always follows its antecedent (= expanded noun/pronoun, nucleus).

NB: (1) the relative does not occur after indefinite or zero determination.

(2) The two basic constructions of the relative verb clause are:
(a) ANTecedent + RELATIVE (actor of verb = antecedent: "the man who heard", "the man who will come"); the antecedent is resumed only where the conjugation pattern has an obligatory actor expression, i.e. the base-conjugation and adjective verbs.
(b) ANTecedent + RELATIVE + RESUMPTION of antecedent (actor of verb not = antecedent: "the man whom I heard", "the man to whom I will come", lit. "... who I heard him", "... who I will come to him").

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
STERN parr. 400, 401-405, 409, 411, 414, 417, 419, 424, 426-427, 428-429, 432-434, 436, 438-439; STEINDORFF parr. 454-455, 459-482; TILL parr. 461-474, 476-
31.1 THE ANTECEDENT: DEFINITE ARTICLE, DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUN (definite determinated relative)

π-ετ- (etc.) "he who ...", τ-ετ- (etc.) "she who ...", η-ετ- (etc.) "they who": The definite relative form functions to all main purposes as a definite noun syntagm or proper names (sections 1-4). There is no restriction of tense or predicate; the def. article varies freely: masculine, feminine or plural; the whole expresses either a specific or a generic substantive relative clause.

Note the three main constructions:
(a) ARTICLE + RELATIVE ("the one that is listening": antecedent = actor), with the actor not expressed in the conjugation form (e.g. affirmative durative present);
(b) ARTICLE + RELATIVE + RESUMPTIVE PRONOUN ("the one that listened", "he who had", "he who is not listening" "that which is good": antecedent = actor) where the actor is expressed in the converted conjugation form (e.g. tense-base conjugation, negated durative present and future (ετε-νη...) αμ existential possession, suffixed-actor forms such as the Adjective Verbs);
(c) ARTICLE + RELATIVE ... + RESUMPTIVE PRONOUN (antecedent not = actor: "he whom I am listening to", "he whom I saw", "that which he has", "he whose house I shall see", "he about whom they say ...").

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
Stern parr. 246, 404; Steindorff parr. 476-477; Till parr. 476-481; Vergote parr. 125, 168; Lambdin par. 3.1, 27.2; *Polotsky, Nom. Transposition parr. 51-57, 61-62; Quecke "Relativsatz"; Shisha-Halevy p. 114

1. πενταγούειν αγούειν (III 222)
2. πενταγάγ χινταρχι ἱπεσών αἱμεττιγασσα γήτευγεντε-λεία ἱπαισυν (P 130.2 85 vo)
3. τετσοογ τετλαοε (Ch. 78)
4. πετιμαγ (IV 113)
5. πετισμενήγ (III 108)
6. πενταγιπαδεγε γήνεγραφι σεσοογι ἱπβωλα ἱειψαξε (Wess. 9 151)
7. πετετεγυνθεία πε μισε νημακ (Ch. 37)
8. πετηνουη νε πετηναουη νην (A I 236)
9. πετεπωψ πε πετεπώι αν αν (Ch. 77)
10. πετετήσων πετετήσων ἀν ἐς ἀλλὰ παρεπρο πεῖνε (III 69)
11. πετετήσων ἀν ἢππογετε (Ch. 78)
12. πετετήσων ἢππογετε ἡπείρας ἀρού τῇρον (Wess. 9 148)
13. ἐπετοφεὶ τοῦπετοφεὶ ἀροφ ἠεγείρειτ ἀν πετετοφεὶ ἀροφ ἠεγείρειτ ἀνπετοφεὶ ἀροφ ἠεγείρειτ ἀν (IV 153)
14. ἢτ πνηφετε ἀγα πνηφετε ἢππογετε πετετήσων ἢππογετε ἢππογετε (IV 42)
15. πετογναφογομόν (P 130.5 111 ro)
16. σταγοφ ἢπτετήσων ἀγα ἢβαψωμε (P 130.4 97 ro)
17. ἢνταθόμολο ἠρον ἢντογ (Ch. 94)
18. νᾶθοο ἢνταναγογο (IV 35)
19. ἢντεογκαγοεικ (Ch. 120)
20. παι ἢτὴμα ιτατετημετσθ (Jcl.)
21. ἅθοο ἃκκαβατον ἃθρομπε ἃν ἢταπανειστ ἀκαπ ἃς ἄρο (IV 120)
   {NB: ἃθρομπε σεκθρομπε}
22. ἢνωα, ἢντοφια ἢππογετε ἢηνθήτκ ταὶ ἢτετείκαλο-
      συνν ἢν εβαλ ἢηντι (III 14)
23. (Can I hide) πρὶ ἢηντε ἢπποοος ἢνον μνήμον οὐ ἢν ἢκώμως ἢμε ναγ
      (Ch. 43)
24. ἃν ημ παὶ ἢτετεπεὶς ἢκας ἢτεβήντῃ (Ch. 135)
25. πετετάπετο ἢκοεις ἢροογ ἢμαγ ἢκαπογετε (A 1 164)

31.1.1 THE FORMAL ANTECEDENT π-: THE LEXEMIC NOMINALIZED RELATIVE

πετ- "one who..."

The nominalized relative functions as a lexeme-equivalent zero-determinated noun, and is preceded by any of the determinators (section 1). Both tense (present only: durative and Adjective Verbs) and predicate (mostly quality: stative and Adjective Verb) are restricted. The element π- is in this case not the definite article: πετ- is the invariable form.

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
Stern parr. 246, 404; Steinendorf parr. 478; Till parr. 480-481; Vergote parr. 125, 168; Lambdin parr. 3.1, 27.2; *Polotsky, Nom. Transposition parr. 74-79; Quecke "Relativsatz"; *Shisha-Halevy p. 114
31.2 THE ANTECEDENT: DEFINITE NOUN SYNTAGM

DEFINITE DETERMINATOR + [noun lexeme] + RELATIVE CONVERSION

Note the three main constructions:
(a) ARTICLE + RELATIVE ("the one that is listening": antecedent = actor), with the actor not expressed in the conjugation form (e.g. affirmative durative present)
(b) ARTICLE + RELATIVE + RESUMPTIVE PRONOUN ("the one that listened", "he who had", "he who is not listening" "that which is good": antecedent = actor) where the actor is expressed in the converted conjugation form (e.g. tense-base conjugation, negated durative present and future (ε-ε-ν- ... ἄν) existential possession, suffixed-actor forms such as the Adjective Verbs)
(c) ARTICLE + RELATIVE... + RESUMPTIVE PRONOUN (antecedent not = actor: "he whom I am listening to", "he whom I saw", "that which he has", "he whose house I shall see", "he about whom they say...")

NB: (1) the resumption is by means of a 3rd person pronoun ("he", "she" "they") unless the relative expression is addressed ("vocative"), when a 2nd person resumption ("you" masc./fem./plural) is idiomatic.
(2) The resumptive pronoun is normally absent when the antecedent is a time-expression or place-expression noun ("the time when...", "the place where..."). For place expressions, ἐκώψ "there" and ἐκώψ "thither" serve as resumption of the antecedent.
1. τορμ ἐντασεὶ εἰς ὕβολον ἵττεψενταμενηπτήρι ἰπνο- 
    τε ἰνῖδον (III 222)
2. πνε ἐεὶναβωκ ἐναγ (III 173)
3. πενθή εἰς ἅγιον ἐναγόγοι (RE II 15)
4. τακαεατος ἵσυναγωγή ἐτίμηγα (Ch. 123)
5. νανοτισίλα ἢταξανος ἄναντενἄντερῳ ἰε Ἰε 
    ἰωγ ἵν ἀογ (P 131.6 73 vo)
6. ἀειβικὴ ἐντασετακτικὴ ἀς ἱβλὴν ἁκροφρωμὲ (III 210)
7. ἰω ἐν παληκ βενναρπαβσον ἱντὶ (IV 179)
8. ὃ ἢρης ἐτερεφίκη ἀπείλη ἐρωτὶ ἑνεβολ ἱπούττων 
    (Ch. 47)
9. πεντσκοφ ἰμίν ἴμικο ἐτογια (Ch. 175)
10. ἤπαθες ἑτεγ (Ch. 163)
11. πενθή ἐν ἤκακ ἵπωγ (Wess. 9 173)
12. ἰω βι ἰν ἐτεφῳ ἐβάγ (IV 43)
      (NB: the resumption here is in the object of the 
13. ἰοτε ἒφεκχοσίς ἐτεμπήζω ἐροἡ ἐκεινῆ οὐ 
    ἐνίδις ἰπτὲξ (Ch. 189)
14. ζετοκαθοι δι ἰρης ἐτεινίφτης ἰπνοτε (Ch. 180)
15. ἰοτε ἐτογιαφ ἰοτε ἒφεκχοσ (Ch. 49)
      (NB: ἐτογιαζ = ἐτ-ογ-ογιαζ (3rd person plural actor))
16. σενατ ἦν ἰπεικ ἐτεπαι ἐπ νημος ἰπνοτε (Ch. 127)
      [OBS. ἐτεπαι ἐ π "namely", "that is to say"]
17. ἀκονονμήρε ἰπορμως ἰνοιτοτ ἐτεπνοτε ἐπ ἰσω ἀκον- 
    νμήρε ἰπομαλ ἰνοιτοτ ἐτεφίλη ἰππὶ ἐ (IV 129)
      [OBS. ἐτε-... ἐ λ occurs after definite or indefinite antecedents 
    in the sense "that is...", "namely"]
18. ἴνοογ ἐτεκοογ ἐ ἐτεχοογ ἰε ἰαντι ἰαρωτ (III 21)
      (NB: ἐτεκοογ 2nd sgl. fem. actor of the present)
      [OBS. The absence of resumption is typical of time-expression 
    and place-expression antecedents, in adverbial relation with the 
    verb expanding them; so also the next text. However, in texts 7 and 11 
    we find full resumption of time antecedents]
19. ταρχ ἤταξης ἰπρωμε (IV 34)
      (NB: ταρχ used as a time-expression)
20. ἐντεκεοογ ἐῃ (A I 451)
      (NB: a nominalized relative with the possessive article serves as 
    antecedent of another relative conversion)
21. πνα ἐνταπετεκοογ ἰ πεν ἰμίκ ἐν πι ἴτεταπο 
    ἰε ἰμιαγ ἵπωγ ἵπωγ (A I 78)
(NB: a “chinese box” construction: ἔχων resumes ἔχει (the external relative), πε resumes π- in πεπερασθε; πεπερασθε 2nd sgl. fem. actor; εκω preposition, 2nd sgl fem. form)

32 THE RELATIVE CONVERSION CARRIED ON

Constructions:
(a) DEFINITE RELATIVE – ἄγω/ν – DEFINITE (or undetermined) RELATIVE (all conjugation forms)
(b) RELATIVE – (ἄγω/ν) – RELATIVE (all conjugation forms)
(c) RELATIVE – (ἄγω/ν) – CIRCUMSTANTIAL (all conjugation forms)
(d) RELATIVE – (ἄγω/ε/θ) – UNCONVERTED CONJUGATION FORM (only perfect)

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
STEINDORFF par. 475; TILL par. 482-486

1. πέμπεις ἄγω ετροεις (III 74)
2. πεπερασθε ἄγω πεπερασθε λαγ ἔτ (III 68)
3. τακτάρκειε ητογεῖε ἔμοι ε ἑτογαιας (IV 48f.)
   [OBS. This is an example of the well known “tautological” figura Sinuthiana in which a lexeme is repeated in a more or less different grammatical characterization]
4. πεπερασθε ἄγω επερασθε ἄγω επερασθε κταιος ερακτος (Ch. 108)
5. πιμοδ ἔμοι ἔταιεις ενεγοβολε ερον ἀ ενεγοσ απ ζηχαν ἔμπο (III 69)
6. πεπερασθε ἄγω πεπερασθε (III 41)
7. ἔνοικος ενεγοβολος εροον ἑταιον τον αγει εβολ ἑντογ
   (Ch. 158)
8. πεπερασθε γαράττι ἄεσων εκσωον (Ch. 29)
9. πεπερασθε ἄγω ετταε γεπερασθε (IV 180)
10. πεπερασθε ἄγω επερασθε (IV 47)
11. πεπερασθε επερασθε (Ch. 194)

33. THE CLEFT SENTENCE WITH NOMINAL/PRONOMINAL FOCUS AND RELATIVE TOPIC: “It is I who speak to you”, “It is God who will provide”, “It was not John whom I saw” — a construction used to put a noun or pronoun in focus with a complete verb clause as its topic.
Constructions:
(33.1) (a) ≠ NOUN (focus) + π-/τ-/θ- - RELATIVE (topic; the form of the topic in agreement with the gender of the focus) ≠
(33.2) (b) ≠ PERSONAL PRONOUN (focus) + π- RELATIVE ≠ (focus: present, future)
   (b1) ≠ PERSONAL PRONOUN (focus) + π- RELATIVE ≠ (topic invariable; all forms)
   (b2) ≠ PERSONAL PRONOUN (focus) + π- RELATIVE ≠ (topic in agreement with the gender of the pronominal focus)

Negated: ≠ (N) FOCUS an Topic ≠

NB: of the two main constituents of this pattern, the first (noun or pronoun) is always the focus (marked predicate), the second the topic (verbal logical subject).

BIBLIOGRAPHY:

33.1 THE FOCUS: PROPER NAME, NOUN SYNTAGM or DETERMINATED RELATIVE, DEMONSTRATIVE, INDEFINITE or INTERROGATIVE PRONOUNS

1. δεωγην τον χε πνοιτε πεταναγ ερον (Orig. 432)
2. μονασκυυς μενην ερνυτεια (Ch. 102)
3. πνοιτε πεντακριμα υπωπε (III 47)
4. ουχοις μαι ναις πετακων (III 37)
5. πουειν πεωαπι μαι νπκανε νμλακ νεν μπετενα-
   ωο αν (P 131.4 157 το)
6. πεκσκταγρος πεντακριμ επκαμ τηρα (RE 10 163)
7. μπρωμε αι πετκτο μισ (i.e. the sword) (IV 12)
8. πετερεπρωμε γαρ μαιαο παι ον πεταναος (BKV 180.2)
9. παι ον οε ετεκσμ μιον ερον γως οε ... (iii 53)
   {NB: οε ετ- a variant of κετ-?}
10. ου γαρ μαιαον πετεσμπνουτε ταυη μητεν (Ch. 97)
11. ου πεταωο ανον νε (Ch. 97)
12. ται πεταναον ημι πεταωον-θην γανωμε περονος (Ch. 156)
13. ται παισβαλον πεταναυν, ουβοε νημι μεταναον πετα-
   ναο ερον ερον (IV 75)
14. ἔτηγογάμη πεντάγωμα (Cat. 42)
   [OBS. The focus here is a definite det. relative; similarly in text 15. In text 8, a det. relative is extrapoled to the Cleft Sentence]
15. πεντάξει ἢ πενταῖραμ ερωτή ἀλλα πεῖχε πενταῖραμ ερωτή (Leyd. 333)
16. σινογέως πιελαξιστος πετεωτί ἢπερμερίτ ἢπιστ ἢπεοφιλεστος ἢμω ἢμαγαρείςτος ἢπια τιμοθεος (Mun. 95)
17. ωμονύτε πετεωτί ἢταξωμ (III 21)
   [OBS. In texts 17-20 we find the Cleft Sentence (with a Proper Name as focus) in the role of a letter-opening self-identification and narrative-opening construction]
18. ὑγρὸ πενταγογος ἐκωτ ἢγυρος ψι ρος ἢγυς ἢγερματοι (A II 462)
19. ὑγρῳμε πετεγυντος ἢμαγ ἢς χρε σχαγ (Ch. 103; cf. Lc. 15:11)
20. ωμοτε ἢτεπωμ ἡγασον ἢτεκμ εεραὶ ἡατην ἢεγερμαθη (III 27)
21. γενμου ἡταξωμε ἢςτη (Young 3)

33.2 THE FOCUS: PERSONAL PRONOUN

1. ἠτωμ ἐκτογον (III 24)
2. ἠτοκ ἐτσωμ ἠτοκ ἐκτωμ (III 104)
3. δινον πεντη ἢσω χμογοτογ (Ch. 70)
4. εντο ἢν πεντασνου ἢνοβε νιμ ει εβολ ασιοτο (P 130.2 67 178)
   {NB: εντο = ἠτο}
5. ἠτωμ ἀρ πεντεπυλακε ἢσω ἢμοις ερωτό ἢς ... (III 48)
   [OBS. contrast the allocutive (2nd-person) resumption in texts 4, 5, 9 with the delocutive resumption of a 2nd-person focus in 8]
6. πεντασνομος ἢποεις ἠτογου γεντασμι ἢν ἢπεις (IV 4)
7. ἠτωμ ἡτεπεπεγγαφα ἢσωσυ ἢμογον ἢκαςορ φ ἢσω ἢπειςογον Ϝσμ εβολ (A II 107)
8. ἠτοκ πεντακρηφι-μεριτο (RE 10 162)
9. ἠτογο ετρωγα (IV 98)
10. ενεντογο πενταγογο νοβε επονυτε αϊνανον πεντασινοβε ερομ (III 38)
   {NB: ενς: interrogation mark}
11. ἠτομον γεντασμι ἢππω ψι αγον ἠτομ (Ch. 156)
12. ἠενοτε ἠτοκ ετακοτοκ ἢτανον (IV 74)
13. ἠτοκ πεντεογονομ θμού εσωσ ςερα εαμετε (A I 193)
33.3 THE CLEFT SENTENCE CONVERTED: circumstantial (e-), preterite (νε-)

1. ἄγεσκ ον ετεθαρις τετρήμνε ἰμοογ (III 87)
2. ἵνεγεψιογηνάλγ εςογηνή ἵνοοτογ ἤνεταιακονει εναινοκ ἀν πενταίπολη λαγ (IV 113)
3. (He saying:) ἤντοι πενταίπορκή εβολ ἵναλα ἡντσγαργιν ἐναινοκ ἀν πενταίπορκή εβολ (III 141f.)
4. (There being four Gospels only) εναι νετρογοειν επκοεμοσ τηρη (Wess. 9 143)
5. ενεογψυχη αν ἴξουν τετήνητνοι νεγναωγ ον πε νε χε ... (III 220)
   {NB: ενε-... νεγηα-... hypothetical (remote) condition and result: section 41, circumstantial preterite conversion of the Cleft Sentence}
6. νεογ πετρωοοπ (Orig. 334)
7. γενρωμε ενεγαζε πενταίκωκ εβολ (Α 1 43)
8. νοε ον ετεθανής πεντακαλρονοει ἤνετηανογ γραντ γενεγονοε ... (Α 1 232)
(C) THE "SECOND TENSE" CONVERSION: THE FOCUSSING MARK

34.1 Cleft Sentence with initial Second Tense topic, non-interrogative adverbial focus: εκάπῃτῇ ἡνείμα “It is here that he stands”
34.2 Cleft Sentence with initial Second Tense topic, interrogative adverbial focus: εκατῇ ἡνείμα ἐπεισὶ “Why is it that he stands here?”

35 Cleft Sentence with initial (mostly interrogative) adverbial focus: ἐπεισὶ ἐκκαὶ ἡμοῦ “Why do you say it?” (“Why is it that …”)

36 Cleft Sentence with interrogative or non-interrogative nominal/pronominal focus, Second Tense topic: ἐκκαὶ ἐπεισὶ “What do you say?”, ἡμοῦ ὅπως “What happened?” (“What is it that …”)

37 Cleft Sentence: the Second Tense (Second Present) focussing its own predicate adverb: εὕρων “Where is he?” (“Where is it that …”)

38 Cleft Sentence: the Second Tense focussing its own lexeme: εκλαοε “You are crazy!!”. The Second Tense in rhetorical questions.

ε-/ἡντ-, ἐντ-ετε- + conjugation form: Table G

The Second Tense conversion marks the conjugation form in the following ways:
(a) (in the presence of other elements than the verb) as of lower predicativity than other, non-verbal clause constituents, thereby putting the latter into focus (focussing or emphasizing them); the English equivalent would be a Cleft Sentence (“It is … that…”; French “C'est … que…”), with the Second Tense its “that…” component;
(b) (where only the conjugation form is the pertinent unit) as emphasizing or underlining its own adverbial verbal or predicate: “He did go (indeed)”, “You are (truly) crazy”, “Will I sin?” (rhetorical), “There he is”.

34.1 The Cleft Sentence with an INITIAL SECOND TENSE TOPIC followed by a NON-INTERROGATIVE ADVERBIAL FOCUS: "It is there that he sat"

# second tense + adverb # (see Table G)

Cleft Sentence Negated: # (ū-) Second Tense an adverb #

NB: As “adverb” here count all lexical adverbs, prepositional phrases, dependent clause conjugation forms (7.1-7.3), circumstantial conversion (28), final clauses (επε- or εκακακ with the Optative or Second Future, 6.4, 17.2).

1. πειρώμενεν λαβαίνεις ερυθρότερον επιεύρετον (IV 198)
2. πετράωγως εμογοτόν τογίναρακων εμφαναρτήτα ετερανε (Ch. 73)
3. πετράωγως εσωτήρ αρεαπεσωτή αυπνιάταις εκατεροσ προ τατον ηη-πασ (III 165)
4. εις κόμοιν ἱλιλαγ κας εμφασισμούν εν εμφαζομεν αμήπεγάς (IV 24)
5. πείνογοντες αν περικαλ αλλα εγό πηγάς ηπαλλαίνων (Ch. 109f.)
6. ειςαγερεις εροιντον ηπαλλα (III 184)
   {NB: ηπαλλα adds “you” (pl.) to the 1st sg. in εροι}
7. ειςαγορευτεις ετερανευτητοις ηγαβον (IV 4)
8. εμφασισμού δογμαμα γαις εν εμφασισμοφ ηπακε τας ημερες (III 85)
9. ειςαγορευτεις εροιντον αλλα εκακακ (Ch. 98)
   {NB: the final (purpose) clause is here put in focus}
10. ημιαι εν ειςαγερεις ημων ειτανιο αυτ τον ημων εκακακ αλλα
   ειταιαν ημων ημων (III 35)
   {NB: two circumstantial present forms are here in focus: the negator negatives the Cleft Sentence, not the circumstantial: “It is not ..., but ... that ...”}
11. εμφασισμούς ηματ ερωσιμπογοιν ελ εροι (IV 20)
   {NB: the conditional is here in focus}
TOPICS OF ADVANCED SYNTAX

[OBS. The sense "as soon as..." or "no sooner ... than..." is idiomatically conveyed by the combination of a Second Tense with a circumstantial or conditional]

12. Ντανακαίοι ήνα Ρρημαν άν Ζηνθλούτε εκανερκιλθα
   λαγα λλα εκανερκεγωλε ιο (III 78)
   [OBS. Of two (or more) non-interrogative adverbial adjuncts, it is usually the last that is put in focus by the Second Tense]

13. Ννεγρωμ άν Νγηκο άν εκωμ άν Χηνοθ Καγα (IV 51)
   {NB: Ννεγ... άν is a frequent form of the negated Second Present construction}

14. Ντανεναγωμ άπ άν Νερψ άλλα Τεογ άν Χηνθορπί (III 21)

15. Νταντένα Βιο τατ άπ άν Ζενθετομεν Ζηνπαξ (Leyd. 311)
   {NB: Τ constitutes a compound verb with Να-, which governs here an immediate direct object (πατ)}

16. Μνεγρεπνατοι άν Χρο Ενεγραξε Νεγρεκστεθ Νηικε (III 200)

17. Μνεγρωμ άν Νενιγραφ Νογούταν Πενιγστριον άν Νογούτ
   Πετάκε Εμολ Ζητή (III 221)
   [OBS. Note the combination of two complementary focussing patterns: a Second Tense construction with a Cleft Sentence with nominal focus]

34.2 The Cleft Sentence with an INITIAL SECOND TENSE TOPIC
     followed by an INTERROGATIVE ADVERBIAL FOCUS: "Where is it that he sat?"

# SECOND TENSE + ADVERB # (see Table G)

NB: the focus here is an interrogative adverbial, mostly a prepositional phrase containing an interrogative pronoun: "why?" "where?", "whither?" "in what way?", "how much? (adv.)", "in which house?"

1. Ετεναμος Εσον (III 74)
2. Επίστη Ντο Ευη (P 130.2 6 87)
3. Εμμην Επογ (IV 94)
   {NB: here the adverb in focus is an infinitive (τη-, see ειπε), attached with Ε- as adjunct ("in order to..."), with the interr. pronoun as direct object)
4. ερευνεῖ ἦν τοῦ εὑρευχότος θηροῦ ἠταρακτώς ἦγου ἑροῦ ἦνυ (III 207)
5. ἐννεθεύε ἐν δὲ τενὸς ἐνεπέμεναν έκθεννεναν ἐν ἦκω
       ἦνας ἐνι νὸδιαῖ ἐβολὴ ἦντῃ ἦνιν ετρεγόροις ἔτει
       ἀν ἔκκεντο (IV 183)
       (NB: ἦκω, ἦνας ἐβολὴ = εὐκω, εὐνας ἐβολὴ)
6. εὑροῦ ἐροῦ ἡγατοῦ ἦγορ ἐθεπήνταγε (IV 6)
7. ἡ εκκαθογοῦσα ἔνοικος ἦγε ἦγεν πανομοσ ἦγαλα (A II 385)
8. ἦτο συσμῖ αὐτ ἦθεν επίθει ἦθεν ἦγε (Ch. 156)
9. ἦνι περίπροσεμε ἢν ἦθογος ἦγε ἦγε (IV 156)
   [OBS. Note the combination of the two Cleft Sentence types: the
   first with pronominal, the second with an adverbial interrogative]
10. ἦτο συσμῖ ἠθεν σινταξήτη ἦγαρ ἦγο (IV 60)
11. εὗρ ἦγε ἦγετε τενὸς ἦσομοκεὐτ ἔτογυντο (IV 6)

35 The Cleft Sentence with an INITIAL (interrogative or non-interrogative) ADVERBIAL FOCUS followed by a SECOND TENSE TOPIC: “Why is it that he sits here?”, “That is why he said this”

# ADVERB + SECOND TENSE # (Table G)

Cleft Sentence negatived: # ADVERB άν + Second Tense #

NB: As “adverb” here count some lexical adverbs non-interrogative prepositional phrases, dependent clause conjunction forms (7.1-7.3), circumstantial conversion (28) and very characteristically two interrogative prepositional phrases: ἦγε ἦγε “how?” and ἐτσο-ογ “why?”

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
* Shisha-Halevy, par. 2.4

1. ἐτσογ εκκαθογοῦσα ἦγοσ ἐν πρώτο ἦγε ἦγε ἦσομε τεκτίμε (Or. 153)
2. ἦγε ἦγε εγογομίνε αν (A II 337)
3. ἡ εγογομίνε αν ἐτσογε ταμο ἦμο (A I 113)
4. ἦγε ἦσομε ἐτσογ ερειτε ανρανομι ἔντεος ἦγεν μο ερο (A II 8f.)
5. κάλως δε εγογομίνεσε (III 46)
6. ἐτσογι ἦγαρ ἦγαρ ἦσομε ... γίζεντοι ἦσομεν ανεγραφή
   χε ... (Wess. 9 144, 152)
7. εβολ. των ἦσομεν ἐτσογε εγογον ἦγεν χιλιάδε ἦγεν ἠμέταταν (Wess. 9 131)
8. ἤπαι ὦν ἐγγὺς ἀιδίνεγβα (Wess. 9 128)
9. εὐμετέ ἠμωτῆ ἁν ἐγὼ ἤπῃ ἐνω ἤπαι (Wess. 9 158)
   {NB: ἀν negates the prepositional circumstantial focus: “It is not hating
   you that . . .”; sim. in text 12 (conditional focus)}
10. ἡπαὶ ἵπτε ἐγκαταῆπον ἑορόν ἱμι ἱκεπίνε ἱοῦ ἱμι
   ἐσῶ ἰττοῦτε (IV 17)
11. ἐτενεὶ χιατείνομο ἱκατοῦ ἐι ἐτπαὶ ἰχιπείνχγεμων
   (Mun. 96)
12. εὑρανταῖσον ἱτσκ ἐσῶ ἱα . . . ἐπεμογι τῷρ (Ch. 38)
13. ἰἱ ἐτενανοβε ἁν Ἱτακαστίγο τοῖ ἰκοῖ (A I 81)

36 Cleft Sentence with (mostly interrogative) NOMINAL or PRO-
NOMINAL FOCUS and SECOND TENSE TOPIC: “What is it you
say?”, “What is it that has happened?”
The focus occupies here the normal place of the non-focal actor or
object. The actor following the conjunction base in the base conjugation,
the Second Tense converter in the durative pattern, the object following
the infinitive.

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
*Shisha-Halevy, p. 2.3

1. ἵτοκ γωκ ἐκοψηνοβε ἀγω ὁγηρ ἁν (A II 509)
   {NB: ὁγηρ orthographic variant of the construct ὁγηρ-}
2. εὐχαίσεογςακε ἵτακαπε ἑοροῦ ἱμοι (Wess. 9 171)
3. ερεπνογυτα ἱπο ἕα εἰσανἀνοβε (Ch. 71)
4. εἰνατάβα- ἁε ἀμελο ἵτακα ἱ εἰναρα ἱμελο ἵταπιφρος ἱταμακάριζε ἱαψ (A II 512)
   {NB: ἵτα- 1st sgl. of the conjunctive (42.1): “and . . .”}
5. εἰναεοῦρ τηνγ (A II 510)
6. ἵταπν ὅγ ήποληρ (A II 150)
7. ἱτετεγογυτα ἁν ἱεγαυγ (P 130.2 111 vo)
8. εἰναγεμογ (Ch. 105)
9. ερεμι χαλα ρα ερεμινασχοῦ ἐρε (P 131.5 4 vo)
10. ἵτανι ἰμως ενεκ κανεγογ σινογε αγω τωάρε
    ἱμπτρεμογ (A II 18)
37. THE SECOND TENSE PUTTING IN FOCUS ITS OWN ADVERBIAL PREDICATE: “Where is it that he is?”

For adverbs which occur also as predicates in the present pattern (section 19), this construction differs in the degree of focality: the Second Tense marks the adverb as higher on the scale of focality (“there he is” as contrasted with “he is there”). Others, notably τῶν “where?”, occur only in the Second Tense conversion.

NB: εὑρὼν “where is he?” is special in that a nominal theme, if postposed, is immediately adjoined to it and, unlike all other conjugation forms, is not introduced by ἠδι.-

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
POLOTSKY, “Conjugation System”, par. 30; *Nominate Transposition par. 122; *SHISHA-HALEVY par. 2.1.1

1. εὑρὼν πεισθῇ τῇ ἁλᾶς ἡ πυθρῃ ἡ πνον (Leyd. 410)
2. εὑρὼν τενπλασι ἡτεμνητὼδε στε ἡ εὑρὼν πειθῶ
   ἡτεμνητῶν ήτεμνῃποκρίσι (Leyd. 316)
3. εὑρῶν ερνοσε ἄγω ετείεμε (Ch. 65)
4. ερσίογαλε ὕεον τῶν τειου εψηναμε (A II 53)
5. ἂν εντειεκκανεια ἃν ἵνα ἵνα ἴνα ἴνα ἴνα ἴνα (III 220f.)
6. τῆς ετερετελεστ ἂραν εψήφῳ ἱδίπηνυμφίοις ἱδίπητ-
   νῆμα (Ch. 138)
7. ερεπρῷ ητοοτ ἰ (IV 12)

38 THE SECOND TENSE PUTTING IN FOCUS ITS OWN PREDICATE VERB: “You are crazy”, “He (does) sin”

Note especially:
(a) the use of the Second Tense in rhetorical questions;
(b) the antithetic Second Tense (second member of antithetic figures);
(c) the use of the Second Future as a jussive, instruction form (“let him hear!”) or 3rd-person imperative

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
*SHISHA-HALEVY, parr. 2.1.2-2.1.7

1. ἱπεπακαίοισ μοῦ ἀλα ἐφήκοτῆ (Ch. 207; cf. Lc. 8:52)
2. ἁπτρεγνῷτῳ ἱπεὶςετῆ ... ἵταγτῳ ἱνο ἱτο ἵτου
   ἄγω ἄγτεο (IV 157)
(NB: πωρέκ = πωρῆς)
3. εἰσαναχος τε εἰρηνοῦ (K 926)
4. εγγανογει εγνωμεν ἤτετμοοῦτ εὐνασθαλα (IV 63)
5. ερεπειωτ ἤνειεγιασθην ἡσπογαδαε ετρεγοφρατη ἕωυν ἥσοζ ἦνοπ ἄινεγη (IV 50)
6. ογον δε νικ ετηκε εξογν ἑφον ἐφονακος εῖτε
   ἕωυν εῖτε σχίτε εὐναστοτας ἕῳρπ ἕκνασς νικ
   ετεογιταγού (IV 71)
7. εῃηνογούτε ᾽νακο  ὑταψυχη (III 20)
8. (He violated his oath) εβολ αν χεεφριζοτε ν ἢρψινε (Λ 131f.)
9. ἢν εὑρατοιουβερῳ εγραύ εροι ἢ εὑναστ ἵκνηκε (Ch. 70)
10. ἢ εὑρητας αἶνας ἔξω (BM Cat. 94)
(D) THE PRETERITE CONVERSION: THE OFF-PLANE/OFF-PACE PROJECTING MARK

39 In narrative
39.1 Narrative detailed ("slow motion") description: progressive view of action, recurring action, state, circumstance: THE IMPERFECT. Projection onto the historical plane.
39.1.1 Converted imperfect in narrative: the Imperfect in adnominal status
39.2 Framing action in narrative: verbs of saying, perceiving, feeling
39.3 Background, anteriority in narrative. Narrator's interposition: interpretation, background information or personal-attitudinal parenthesis

40 The Imperfect in dialogue or exposition: Past state, habit, durative action.

41 The Preterite converter expressing REMOTENESS FROM REALITY OR HYPOTHETICALITY
41.1 The remote condition ("irrealis" protasis): CIRCUMSTANTIAL PRETERITE
41.2 Remote wish: γαμει
41.3 Remote consequence: PAST FUTURE, IMPERFECT, PAST NOMINAL SENTENCE

ne- + clause: Table G

An off-plane, off-pace projecting mark, the preterite converter indicates a deviation in time, pace ("tempo") or actuality from a mainstream frame of reference. In narrative, this means a change in narrative pace (esp. from historical narration to description or detail-rich recounting) or in time perspective (background, anteriority) or in both. In dialogue or exposition, this "gear shift" expresses past state or habit, or speaker's past perspective.

A second important function of the preterite converter is to convey remote hypotheticality, notably in remote hypothetical condition and result ("irrealis"), also in remote wish.

NB: The morph πε following the preterite form seems to mark its backgrounding role.
39. THE PRETERITE CONVERSION IN NARRATIVE

39.1 NARRATIVE DETAILED DESCRIPTION ("slow motion"): a progressive view of action, recurring action, state, circumstance: the Imperfect. Projection onto the plane of "history".

NB: note the frequent combination of the Imperfect with the perfect, with the characteristic predication of state (statives and adverbs) in the former vs. act (infinitives) in the latter conjugation form.

1. ἀπε εὐγάμων ἀδιπνὸς ἡμηρὲ αὐῳ ἦπερκérioτε ἐματε αὐῳ ἦπερκίναδυνευε εὐφὴν ἐςον επνοῳ ἐςογεπων (Mun. 96)
2. ἦτοον ἡρσιπποσ ἡνρῃπολικ τιανος χθνεοου ντανκι ἡνηρισωμε τιρου χθης  ἰπιατνουτε (III 32)
   (NB: τιανος = Panopolis ("Pan’s city", Akhmim in upper Egypt))
3. και γαρ αὐρὴνεγκοεις αὐπωτ ἦτοοτ εειξι  ἰμοου ἰδουν ἰκωτγαννοσ αὐῳκ επνα ετεσναγ ανοκ ἰε  ἰπανκοεις ἰα πε ἐπανωτ ἦτοοτογ ἰνετκι ἰλοι ἰδουν (III 145)
4. αὑρινε ἰνετκι εβολ... ἦτοο ε ἰεσσωβε ἰ εςαραφε εςοοοτ  ἰματε (A 1 53)
5. νεπεντελωνς ἰε τιρου μνηρηφονεβε χθην εςον ερον (A 1 265)
6. νερπανε δε μνενκοογε εςαφωυν νεσαναγ χε ινωμ επειγε  ἰνειεκν ετιμαν  αυω νεμεεπειεε  ἰμοογ χε (III 149)
7. (They drank from the rock) τπετρα νεονυς  ἰνοου (A II 465f.; cf. I Cor. 10:4)
8. πεξαν εν ετεεεκριον ετιμαν  ἰποντρον  ἰενεγγυνε  αυω νεγσοτετ ετρεκαν  ἰε-εναδι-ογνα (A II 170)
   (NB: ἰε- (usually ἰε-, i.e. ἰε-ἐνε-) "whether")
9. ἀλλαρος ὁμονον ἰεμηναν τε ἀλλα  ἰερπκεεπειγνει ὀν επε χθνεσαι εβολ χθτετρανεα (Ch. 38)
39.1.1 CONVERTED IMPERFECT IN NARRATIVE: THE IMPERFECT IN ADNOMINAL STATUS

Circumstantial or relative Imperfect, predicing a stative or an adverb (i.e. state)

NB: following a definite time-expressing noun, the form eμε- is ambiguous: it merges circumstantial and relative conversions (Table G, and 27.2)

1. γῆνενογοιείων θνηθεν και ενεγγυετον γιαμπέκας (A II 539)
2. πτωσις ενεισυμε (III 117)
3. ηε ενεκο μηνος γνηστομετανηθεν μπατκει ερμηγε ενειτοποσ (IV 95)
   [OBS. -ο μηνο- : this is the pronominal form of -ο η- ("being in a state of"), with the pronoun resuming the antecedent ηε "the manner"; the whole would correspond to English "as you were")
4. μηνεον ενεγγῳθυν (Ch. 83)
5. πεια ετηπριος μεθε μεμεειστε ηγαλο απα πησοι πηα ενεγγυοον ηγστα (IV 120)
6. τεσσυχ ενεκον ηατκαρπος μογοιεια ρένουν αε ακαπαι γνησπναοις ηαγαθον (IV 186)
   [NB: ενεκο- = ενενεκ-, ενεκ-]
7. απιστον μηδηλωσ γηκπολοις ενεγγυικτοιοι χειμερητακο μηκενωμε μηνονομα μηνομορπα (Mun. 98)
8. πεντακτηιεπερθη ἐβολ γηπετενεγγυοον αν (A II 418)

39.2 FRAMING ACTION IN NARRATIVE: VERBS OF SAYING, PERCEIVING, FEELING ("verba dicendi et sentiendi")

1. μηνογηζηνθη γαροου μαγανη και μνημον γα αν πε χεινενμένα ενατσογι εκτετεγανε (A II 102)
2. πρωμε αρισμοπε ενο ηρα μοιγοισι γηαφαχε ενετακτοις αγας ενηκω μηνος χεινανοσ γαν ετρατη ηςογεαινταςε (A I 453)
3. πεασα αε... γεκνουοε αε ενηκω μηνος αε... αγας εγχω μηνας εβολ εχεμπομεκροκους (III 118)
   [NB: εγχω: Second Present]
4. μεξιογα ταρ γηθην επετινην εβολ γηρω (A II 520)
5. μη ενεγγοοου αε οι αν πε χεπομονδν μηταλγυμη μηαι... εκτογυμε περαι εχωγ (A II 2f.)
Topics of Advanced Syntax

{NB: 
Second Imperfect, marking the question as rhetorical\}
6. (Of Jacob and his parents) ἡρεχμήν ἡγεωγ ἡδἰνοχρ ἐνα-

7. ἀβραὰμ 

39.3 Background, Anteriority in Narrative. Narrator’s Interposition (interpretation, background information)
or Personal-Attitudinal Parenthesis

Imperfect, Pluperfect (νε-αγ/-νε-μητ-), νε- + Nominal Sentence

1. 

2. 

3. (The destruction of the Deluge descended upon them) οὐμονον ἁγεβανογ νογόλ ενεα ναλλα ἁγεγηπκεραψ ἡντὴ-

4. ταί 

5. 

6. (The Sword returned to its sheath) ἐναλ 

7. 

8. 

[OBS. Note the use of the present conjointly with the Imperfect]

[OBS. -c neutric feminine, pronominally heralding the 

[OBS. -c masculine singular, pronominally heralding the 

[OBS. Note the use of the present conjointly with the Imperfect]
40. **THE IMPERFECT IN DIALOGUE OR EXPOSITION: PAST HABIT, STATE, DURATIVE ACTION**

1. (Confessions:) *nēiŋṭ̃pois tēn inim hēio hēmatoi inim (A 184)
   {NB: inim indefinite, not interrogative}
2. *nēmokhevw gar qrui nhht xeouatbom pe eterpwn epro ēpro
   epnē h eMegelos nhpetnoynte (III 39)
3. *anok de neio ṃpaxoeic an pe etrapwt īntooyt
   ṃnetxi ynoi ībont (III 145)
4. *neioqsw mā necahy etetetn̄̃casb (IV 93)
5. *qhbh gar ṃpatowkōiνων inām nēmp̣̃sor an xen-
   neq̣̃i-ṭ̃sorite ṃxiouge (IV 105)
6. *neixowxne nāi maq̣̃s xennawswpe on īc̣̃kānaxlōn
   īnseqụ̃ kenteine zēneikezw (III 147)
7. *neioqsw mēn pe etaww-placement epro (i.e. about David)
   kattapēq̣̃̃pis aλα λēkēc nēenvswk zēnāi īnṭ̃meleq̣̃
   etkawng̣̃cis nēnṭ̃awswq̣̃ epro ṭ̃nkōṭ̃ ton tehoeg̣̃
   egrǎγ̣̃h etoỵ̃sw īnṭ̃waxe eproy (Ch. 209)

41. **THE PRETERITE CONVERTER EXPRESSING REMOTENESS FROM REALITY OR HYPOTHETICALITY**

41.1 **THE REMOTE-HYPOTHETICAL CONDITION ("irrealis" proteas): CIRCUMSTANTIAL PRETERITE**

*ēnep̣̃sc̣̃wṭ̃ (...] pe) / *ēnep̣̃(n)qc̣̃swṭ̃ ān (...] pe), "If he heard/did not hear..."

*ēnēnṭ̃sc̣̃wṭ̃ (...] pe) / *ēnēmp̣̃sc̣̃wṭ̃ (...] pe) "If he had (not) heard/had he (not) heard..."

*ēṇ̃c̣̃- Nominal Sentence: "If (he) were, had been..."

NB: the most common result clause has the past future *nēsna ... pe, see 41.3
BIBLIOGRAPHY:
Stern par. 630; Steindorff par. 486-489; Till par. 456; Vergote par. 212(3); Lambdin par. 29.1; Polotsky, “Conjugation System” par. 17; YOUNG, “Unfulfilled Conditions”

1. ἐνετετνέοοοὺν ῥνηρβρώον ἑτετνάρξοτε ἑιτοῦ ἀν ἐν ἐπε (Mun. 102)
2. ἐνεοὐγῆμον ἑογα ἑκεῖμε ἑογαβαλ ἑτεοὐγῆςαλ ἑταὶ ἑνῆ-
καταλύον ἀν ἐν (III 36)
3. ἐνεγὸ γαρ ἑατεοοὐν ἑνεγμήτατῳ ἑνεγῷπιν ἡᾳν ἀν
ἐν (III 75)
4. ἐνεργεεβόλ γαρ ἑῃτὶ ἀν ἐνεγμε ἤμον ἱμε ἑηγαδὸ-
ὼμαν ἐν (E 87)
5. ἐνεηγοημήταξα ἑἴμαξε ἑηγασῶμοδον ἀν ἠἀπα ἑῃμ-
ροιςεὶ (IV 94)
[OBS. The protasis here is an adverbial phrase, with no verb]
6. ἑεηιπεπιςε ἑητετνάρξεἰ ἀν ἐν ἐν ἑκτη-πυργος
(III 21)
7. ἑεηιμον ἑηηναξιοοο ἀν ἐν ἐξ ... (Ch. 179)
8. ἑεηιὴπαραρος ἑοο οὐ ἐν ἐται Ἔμνατοι ἄν ἑη-
ψωμογον (Ch. 70)
9. ἑηηιογος ἐν τη θειανόμια ἑεηεπνοῃτε ἑαξγοερ-καιιν
ἀν ἐν (IV 157)
10. ἑεηιηπεπιςαταμας ἑηῳ ἐν ἑηηερωῳ ἡμ ηℏησηπε
ἐηανομή ἐν (A 1 393)
11. ἑεηηὶςκογο ἐρος ἀν (i.e. the well) ἑηεηαριςε ἑηοο ἐν
ἐτρεγεομοο (III 70)
12. ἑεηηηςαεψ-σόκοσ ἐρ ἑητοῦ ἐηραὶ ἑεηεβοτε ἑηο
ἐρο ἐν ἑτρεκ ἤ ὑῆνη ἐὴηεφαταςία (Ch. 29)
{NB: ἑητοῦ ἕε ἑηε}

41.2 THE REMOTE or HYPOTHETICAL WISH

ζαμοὶ εἐν-, ζαμοὶ νε- “Would that ... !”

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
Stern par. Steindorff par. 491; Till par. 456 B2; Vergote par. 201(3)

1. ζαμοὶ ἐεηαργογαηαζοητ ἀν (Ch. 77)
2. ζαμοὶ ὁν ἱμε ἑηγαδὸλογος ἑαροο ἱδηεηατζοτῆμε
ἐηίμαγ (Mun. 100)
3. ἵ ν κ κνεφόντας ψωμίδιον νυκτός ἰεροῦ ἱεροῦ (P 131.8 94 ε) τό 
4. ἵ ν κ κνεφόντας ἱεροῦ (P 131.8 94 ε) τό 
5. ἵ ν κ κνεφόντας ἱεροῦ (P 131.8 94 ε) τό 
6. ἵ ν κ κνεφόντας ἱεροῦ (P 131.8 94 ε) τό 
7. ἵ ν κ κνεφόντας ἱεροῦ (P 131.8 94 ε) τό 

41.3 THE REMOTE or HYPOTHETICAL RESULT following a 
remote protasis (41.1) 

Past future (νεκαντα), νε- + Nominal Sentence; ... πε is the rule. 
1. ενεγκατάστατε εικόνας τούτων νεφ- 
2. ενεγκατάστατε εικόνας τούτων νεφ- 
3. ενεγκατάστατε εικόνας τούτων νεφ- 
4. ενεγκατάστατε εικόνας τούτων νεφ- 
5. ενεγκατάστατε εικόνας τούτων νεφ- 
6. ενεγκατάστατε εικόνας τούτων νεφ- 

{NB: ἰεροῦ = ἵ ν κ κνεφόντας ἱεροῦ (P 131.8 94 ε) τό 

{NB: ενεγκατάστατε εικόνας τούτων νεφ- 

{NB: ενεγκατάστατε εικόνας τούτων νεφ- 

{NB: ενεγκατάστατε εικόνας τούτων νεφ- 

{NB: ενεγκατάστατε εικόνας τούτων νεφ- 

{NB: ενεγκατάστατε εικόνας τούτων νεφ- 

{NB: ενεγκατάστατε εικόνας τούτων νεφ- 

{NB: ενεγκατάστατε εικόνας τούτων νεφ- 

{NB: ενεγκατάστατε εικόνας τούτων νεφ- 

{NB: ενεγκατάστατε εικόνας τούτων νεφ- 

{NB: ενεγκατάστατε εικόνας τούτων νεφ- 

{NB: ενεγκατάστατε εικόνας τούτων νεφ- 

{NB: ενεγκατάστατε εικόνας τούτων νεφ- 

{NB: ενεγκατάστατε εικόνας τούτων νεφ- 

{NB: ενεγκατάστατε εικόνας τούτων νεφ- 

{NB: ενεγκατάστατε εικόνας τούτων νεφ- 

{NB: ενεγκατάστατε εικόνας τούτων νεφ- 

{NB: ενεγκατάστατε εικόνας τούτων νεφ- 

{NB: ενεγκατάστατε εικόνας τούτων νεφ- 

{NB: ενεγκατάστατε εικόνας τούτων νεφ- 

{NB: ενεγκατάστατε εικόνας τούτων νεφ- 

{NB: ενεγκατάστατε εικόνας τούτων νεφ- 

{NB: ενεγκατάστατε εικόνας τούτων νεφ- 

{NB: ενεγκατάστατε εικόνας τούτων νεφ- 

{NB: ενεγκατάστατε εικόνας τούτων νεφ- 

{NB: ενεγκατάστατε εικόνας τούτων νεφ- 

{NB: ενεγκατάστατε εικόνας τούτων νεφ- 

{NB: ενεγκατάστατε εικόνας τούτων νεφ- 

{NB: ενεγκατάστατε εικόνας τούτων νεφ- 

{NB: ενεγκατάστατε εικόνας τούτων νεφ- 

{NB: ενεγκατάστατε εικόνας τούτων νεφ- 

{NB: ενεγκατάστατε εικόνας τούτων νεφ- 

{NB: ενεγκατάστατε εικόνας τούτων νεφ- 

{NB: ενεγκατάστατε εικόνας τούτων νεφ- 

{NB: ενεγκατάστατε εικόνας τούτων νεφ- 

{NB: ενεγκατάστατε εικόνας τούτων νεφ- 

{NB: ενεγκατάστατε εικόνας τούτων νεφ- 

{NB: ενεγκατάστατε εικόνας τούτων νεφ- 

{NB: ενεγκατάστατε εικόνας τούτων νεφ- 

{NB: ενεγκατάστατε εικόνας τούτων νεφ- 

{NB: ενεγκατάστατε εικόνας τούτων νεφ- 

{NB: ενεγκατάστατε εικόνας τούτων νεφ- 

{NB: ενεγκατάστατε εικόνας τούτων νεφ- 

{NB: ενεγκατάστατε εικόνας τούτων νεφ- 

{NB: ενεγκατάστατε εικόνας τούτων νεφ- 

{NB: ενεγκατάστατε εικόνας τούτων νεφ- 

{NB: ενεγκατάστατε εικόνας τούτων νεφ- 

{NB: ενεγκατάστατε εικόνας τούτων νεφ- 

{NB: ενεγκατάστατε εικό

{NB: ενεγκατάστατε εικό

{NB: ενεγκατάστατε εικό

{NB: ενεγκατάστατε εικό

{NB: ενεγκατάστατε εικό

{NB: ενεγκατάστατε εικό

{NB: ενεγκατάστατε εικό

{NB: ενεγκατάστατε εικό

{NB: ενεγκατάστατε εικό

{NB: ενεγκατάστατε εικό

{NB: ενεγκατάστα 

{NB: ενεγκα 

{NB: ενεγκα 

{NB: ενεγκ 

{NB: ενεγ 

{NB: ενε 

{NB: ενε 

{NB: ενε 

{NB: ενε 

{NB: εν 

{NB: εν 

{NB: εν 

{NB: εν 

{NB: εν 

{NB: εν 

{NB: εν 

{NB: εν 

{NB: εν 

{NB: εν 

{NB: εν 

{NB: εν 

{NB: εν 

{NB: εν 

{NB: εν 

{NB: εν 

{NB: εν 

{NB: εν 

{NB: εν 

{NB: εν 

{NB: εν 

{NB: εν 

{NB: εν 

{NB: εν 

{NB: εν 

{NB: εν 

{NB: εν 

{NB: εν
UNIT (II): THE CONJUNCTIVE
(sections 42-43)

42.1 The conjunctive extending (continuing-and-representing, extending, “carrying on”) preceding conjugation-forms
42.2 The conjunctive extending (continuing-and-finitizing, “carrying on”) preceding infinitives

43. The conjunctive as a “that” clause form: in construction with preceding adverbial (“conjunction”), nouns or clauses.

42.1 THE CONJUNCTIVE CONTINUING-AND-REPRESENTING (“CARRYING ON”, EXTENDING) CONJUGATION FORMS

Form: ḃiṣcwTN. Nominal, demonstr./indef. pronoun, 2nd person sgl. fem. actor: ḃiṣc- ... cwTN

The conjunctive (7.4) serves to express a special, closely-knit kind of coordination (“microcoordination”) to a preceding verbal clause amounting to its extension. It is in this role either preceded by ḣaw “additionally”, “and”; ḫ “or”; ḥah “however”, and other conjunctural adverbials, or it may be conjunctionless; in the latter case it usually expresses directed coordination (“and then ...”, “and so ...”, “so that ...”). Note that, while its verbal semantics (tense, mode etc.) are wholly induced by the conjugation form “carried on” or extended by it, its actor may either resume the actor of the extended conjugation form, or a new actor (noun or pronoun) may be asserted. Similarly, its negativizing (by -TN-, 7.1-4) may either be induced by a negativized precedent clause or be asserted as a new negation.

Illustrated below are the constructions of (a) the conjunctive extending specific conjugation forms, (b) the conjunctive extending various protatic clauses (“if ...” clauses).

NB: (1) note the prevalence of subcoordination following imperatives.
(2) The 1st sgl. form of the conjunctive is ḭTN- (for the microcoordination function) or ḥN- (for subcoordination).

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
Stern par. 440, 443-445, 447; Steindorff par. 368-369; Tili par. 321-322; Vergote par. 161(1); Lambdin par. 25.2; *Shisha-Halevy. Chapter 7
(a) The conjunctive extending specific conjugation forms:

1. Ἐνατολάμα δὲ ἤταξε ἡπεισάω ἱναςφνασάνη (III 123)
2. τῶοιν ἡτημετανοεῖ (III 181)
3. σκασάωτε ἤτεσ्तεμετὶ (Ch. 93)
   [OBS. The neutric e “it” with ἡπει “happen” is typically continued by the conjunctive as a content-clause (“that ...”)]
4. ὤγωμ ἀρα (A II 206)
5. σερρότε γνητό ἵπαγελος ἕξεῖ ἡπεισάω ἱνοοῦ γιγ
   ἱκνοοοῦτος (IV 21)
6. ἔσαρσελε ἰκογον τοῦ ἀρα καὶ ἦτεροογε οἱ ἐγρα φη
   (A II 191f.)
7. νεγνάλανεκε ἱνοοῦν ἀν πε γνατοφοξογου ἐγρα επκωτ
   ἱγ γιγ ἐπρα επνοοο γιγν ἱκεραφτογ έπκα (IV 24)
8. Ἐναταμνότι ἐσενταςάκολο ἐρον ἦκτογ ἰκτισάβωτι
   ἐσενταςάκικοι ήτι (Ch. 94)
9. ἄν ἠὲ κεντιελγαρε ἱνοοῦν καὶ ἰκβρωκ εγοῦν ἐροο
   ἱκτιεσ-νοηε ἤτεςψψγ χπι (Ch. 56)
   {NB: ἦ- sec eine}
10. ερεπεκχ νατογο εροο ἱνοῦρ γιγ νατεοο ήτι (Ch. 85)
11. δακ ἠελαξιστον γεγνανε ἐτεκταπρο ντακ ἡπτονοε
    ἤτετμετε ἱνικαβεε (IV 41)
12. μαρογαζανε γιγ ἱκεσώτι (Ch. 163)
13. εἰεβεξωι ἰκταςάιομ (III 183)
14. ἰπτρανεαν ἱγννο επνοιτε ἱπεψχ ετεεογονογ
    ἱνοσοαα ἱνογον γιγ ἰμετασέβης γιγ ἰντρωπε
    ἱκαξε ενεςπετογαβ (IV 5)
15. ἰκτην ἰαρο μαγατε τευναγογν ἰκεσωτι ἱκανωκαξε
    επεχ (III 191)
16. κατ τατρενεσήν ἱογανασ ήτι (III 16)

(b) The conjunctive extending protatic (“if...”) clauses:

1. εὐσώτε ἔγκατσε ἱνογασαγ εὐγναταγ ἱματ ἱκεσʔερε
   ἱκεσʔερε ἱματ σέ εγρα ἱκνοψενε... (P 130.2 41 160)
   {NB: εὐγναταγ: the circumstantial is governed by εὐσώτε “If it be the case that...”}
2. ὤγατομο πε ετρεπναβολος τρεφώσε ἰμεςε ἱπεπεψη-
   ἱκναγ γροφε ἐπνεεγε ἱπναβολος Ἐν Ἐντοτρ ἱματ (Ch. 63)
42.2 THE CONJUNCTIVE CONTINUING-AND-FINITIZING ("CARRYING ON", EXTENDING) INFINITIVES

Here the conjunctive, extending the infinitive (actorless), also supplies a finite actor (pronoun or noun), i.e. finitizes it. The pronominal actor used is either one in agreement with the context, or the generic “you” (2nd person singular masculine).

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
Stern par. 447(g); *Shisha-Halevy, par. 7.2.5

1. οὐγνὸμον ἠμοοῦν εὐθανατε ἐξώ ἑτερποιεῖς καὶ ἡμὼν ἐβολὰ (III 135f.)
2. Νανοῦς ὁς ἐρεσιός ἑτέρκιονομεν ημεοοὺν ἡγοῦν ἐρεβόν ἑτέρκιονομεν ημεοοὺν ἐβολὰς ἑτερποιεῖς ημεοοὺν (III 134.38 vo)
3. Νανοῦς ὁς ἐρεσιός ἑτέρκιονομεν εὐθανατε ἐπετείκιον ἑτερποιεῖς (IV 93)
4. Ὡγε εὐθανατε ἑττοῦ ἑτερποιοῦ ἐπετείκιον ημεοοὐν (III 118)
5. οὐγκάκαριος ς τῇ ἡμοῖκη ἑττοτῇ ἡ εκκῆι ὁν ἡγοῦ ἐρεβόν ἑτερποιοῦ ἑμετάκτας ἡμὼν (III 65f.)
   (NB: ἡ εκκ—... on “or, even having...”)
6. Ἑπισκό παν ἐβολὰ ἠμοοῦς ἐπετείκιον ἑμετακτάς ἑμετερποιεῖς (III 65)
7. αυερθν ηαγ ον ετρεγογωμ νεσωτ νηματ γιαντεφπα-νεξα (Ch. 131)
8. τταρακαλει ιτετενιμετρωνιτ ετητρετετετεομελει αλλα ιτετενιαρθην ενωθηκε ετογαβ (III 31)
9. γιαπτρετικα ηογων ημπεπια ετογαβ αγω ιτεπεπια ετογαβ ηογων ηματ (A II 403)
10. μηνκατρετικα ηγ ηογον αν ογτε ειαη αν αλλα μην μηνον εχατη αγω ιτετεμηγαι εκστη (III 169)
11. ειιαιητηπεπα αρω δομη μποκογ (III 131)

43. THE CONJUNCTIVE AS A “THAT”-CLAUSE: IN CON- 
STRUCTION WITH PRECEDING ADVERBIALS (“conjunctions”), 
NOUNS or CLAUSES

Note especially the conjunctive following ειμητι “unless”, γωκε 
“so that” and its negative μηνοτε “lest”, κοικ “hardly”, 
(ταιοι (and γενοιτο) “Would that...”; the Nominal Sentence κεκογι 
πε... “It is but a step...” and similar; μανογε, “It is better”

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
Stern par. 443, 611-616; Steindorff par. 371; Till par. 323-324; 416; 
Vergote par. 161(1), 209(4,5), 211(3,4), 212(5); Lambdin par. 30.10; *Shisha- 
Halevy par. 7.3-7.4

1. γιαμωγογμ αν ογτε γιαμωγεμοογ αν ειμητι γιαπε 
πεαιογομ βαγ πεαιομο (Ch. 158)
2. ογ γαρ πετι ογβο ειμητι γιαμετι ογβο εμαλα (III 107)
3. σερασε εξημετεπε επιακαε αγωκε εποο γ (Ch. 85)
4. ωαει ωοροτη γηα γιαμηωρα γωκε γιαπεγροο 
ιτετεμηγαε βαεεπε ετετεμηρητη (III 21)
5. ειαμα εν εκελαα γιακατεκαω καταετεμεγε εροε 
εβολ γιαςραόε μηνοτε γιαμω γαχε κατα απειτη 
αι (A I 52)
{NB: (γεα-) τρα- 1st sgl. of -τρεϕ “(other) than that...”}
[OBS. Note the different function of για- (following conjunctions) 
and τρα- (microcoordinating)]
6. καλωσ μογο εισαπαεγμε εβολ γιαλονοεμε μηνοτε 
ιτεογακα αγο κωπε μαν μηγαιαγομ (III 222)
7. μογ εβολ γιαπολικ επανομομε μηνοτε εκεοτικ 
εγραε εποοετι ειτογα (III 169)
8. πολείν εὐαγγέλιαν ἐκ εἰρατός Ὑσοῦν νῦν ἡπλώς εἰρήνη ἐποοὺ ἡμῖν γὰρ νῦν ἔστιν ἐρατός ἡμᾶς ἡμᾶς καὶ ἡμᾶς (Ming. 84)

9. ἀλλά ἕτερα ἐν Χιλανταγωγῷ διήνυσε αἰλάντας ἐπεκαταράκτας ἡμῶν παρανεπεκτάστη ὑπονοού (IV 85γ.)
[OBS. Note the variation of the conjunctive and τρέ- as "that"-forms]

10. οὐρίκε χων ἐκ ἕτερων ἀγοραῖς ὑπονοεῖ ἡμῶν ἔστιν ἡμῶν ἡμῶν ἡμῶν ἡμῶν ἡμῶν ἡμῶν (Ch. 68)

11. ἐνεκου ἐκ τῆς ἡγῳος ὑπερερχομένη (P 131,5 79 84)

12. ὑποτικός ἐν νῦσθεν ἐνεκε σχεδὸν ἡμῶν ἡμῶν ἡμῶν ἡμῶν ἡμῶν ἡμῶν ἡμῶν ἡμῶν ἡμῶν ἡμῶν ἡμῶν ἡμῶν ἡμῶν ἡμῶν (Wess. 9 88)

13. ζαμοῖ ἐνεκερκεπότε ἡμῶν ἐκ τῆς ἐνεκερκέπου (IV 164)

14. νανήσεις ἐν ἑνεκερκεπού τοῦ καλοῦ τοῦ οὐροτοῦ οὐροτοῦ οὐροτοῦ οὐροτοῦ οὐροτοῦ οὐροτοῦ οὐροτοῦ οὐροτοῦ οὐροτοῦ οὐροτοῦ (Wess. 9 158)
UNIT III: CONDITIONAL AND RELATED CONSTRUCTIONS
(sections 44-48)

44.1 ἐγὼ ἐκεῖθεν generic-eventual condition: “If and when ...”, “Whenever ...”
44.2 ἐναντιοῦν ἐγὼ ἐναντιοῦν: “As soon as ...”, “Immediately when ...”
45 ἐναντιοῦν- argumentative, topical condition: “Granted that ...”, “Given/ supposing that ...”
45.1 ἐναντιοῦν ἐναντιοῦν- “as if ...”
46 ἐναντιοῦν, καν disjunction of alternative cases: “Whether ... or ...”, “Be it ..., be it ...”
47 ἐναντιοῦν- remote or hypothetical (“unreal”) condition: see 41.1-3
48 Concessive “conditions” (“Even though ...”, “Even if ...”, “Even if (as is usual/apparent) ...”): καν, ἐναντιοῦν-

44.1 ἐγὼ ἐκεῖθεν, GENERIC-EVENTUAL CONDITION: “If and when ...”, “Whenever ...” (7.3)

Note the use of the Conditional in general (also gnomic) statements, with the aorist as a typical apodosis

NB: ἐγὼ ἐκεῖθεν is a rare form of the negated Conditional (normally ἐγὼ ἐκεῖθεν-)

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
Stern par. 420-421; Steindorff par. 492; Till par. 447-448; Vergote par. 161(5), 212(2); Lambdin par. 29.1; Wilson pp. 90-95; Young, “Εἰδέ”

1. ἄλλος ἐπεγεννεῖγεν ἐβολὴ εὐερενείοτε ἃρχαιος χαῖρε ἠπετεμπίπτονοιστε (IV 22)
2. ἐπεγεννεῖγεντε ἔρημα κεναπάρακε (III 31)
   {NB: παράκε = παράκε}
3. ἐπεγεννεῖγενεῖν ὁι ὁνομαίοις ἡμείς τριάς ἐτούας (Wess. 9 136)
   {NB: ἔγωγ- = εὐεγγελ-}
4. ἐγὼ ἐξαιροῦσαν τόκοιον ἀν ἥλαττο τόκοιον ἀν ἢμα νῖ κεπατεμπίπτοναῖτο ἤπατοις (Ch. 68)
5. ἐγὼ ἐκεῖθεν δε ἑτερεληφθεντες εὑρίσκοντας ἑπίσκεψαι ἐκ-
topics of advanced syntax

6. οντως ουσιαστικω δε πο ερωτηματομε εμετε ηπελεξ

7. τεστικω υπανελεγοντο μετεφεσονοτο ετενηηαν αρον αγω

8. (Let no one hit a man in my name... ειοντε αγω ον εισανω

9. ερωτηματομε εγκα ηνηε εξωθ εμιν ηνοιον ηαω ηνε

10. ουνενενενηε ρεροντατομε ερον ηνοον μονων ερον

11. ηροντατομε ρω χωνηηε μετεφεσονοτο ευγε

12. εσενεοτεομε μοινενηε πονενοηε

44.2 ροταν ερωταιομεν "As soon as ...", "Immediately when ...", "Only when ...", "Whenever ..."

1. ροταν δε ερωταιοτατους πεπνηα ηνακαρπον ηνηα

2. ροταν ερωταιοο ηνηηενηε εμοτεοτο εςερι εςεπεσονοτο επεσονο (III 219)

3. ροταν ερωταιοομε ερωρη ηνωβ νηηε ροηηασοηε

4. ροταν ερωταιοομε μενερνονοτο ωναρηηονοτο ηδομ

5. (It is a great perfection that a man should cut himself off from his brother or son or daughter of father or mother for the sake of God) ροταν ερωταιοονοτο επενηαηαηηηοου (IV 128)

6. (The order of solitary prayer or meditation:) ροταν ερωταιο

ει επεεηη ητεπα λαλο εςερι ταηη (IV 156)
45 εὑρε- ARGUMENTATIVE TOPICAL “CONDITION”: “Granted that...”, “Given/supposing that...”, “If (as we know/as you will no doubt agree) ...

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
STERN parr. 629; STEINDORFF parr. 485; WILSON p. 98f.

1. εὑρε- ἁνονγενεοοὐ τεθύσις ἱνεκοοῦ τὸν ὄγαρον ἱερατῆς τοῦ τεκναί (Ch. 65)
2. εὑρεχεγενεουοὐνὴ ὑμιν ἀν εὐκρω ὑνῶν ἔπετθατα ἔπτωταν ἔποιητος ἔποιητος ἐστι τοῦτο εἰς ἐγκαταστάσεις (IV 96)
3. εὑρεχεγεραπτικὸς δὲ ἦν ἡγελαμ ἦκρυ ἐπὶ τὸ σώμα τοῦ ὑγείας ἦν ἐνεπεκτικαὶ τοῦ ἰδίᾳ ἐν ἐνεγγυμένοις τοῖς ἱερατικῶς (III 45)
[OBS: ἱεραπτική: the Second Present introduced by ἱερα- conveys a scepticism about the truth of the statement; approx. “allegedly”]
4. εὑρεχελεισποῦ ἔρισκε ἔσπων ἔνθετον ἐπερήκασκε ἔπτωταν ἔπεθεσθὰν ἔποιητος ἐπὶ τοῦ ἑρατικὸς (III 145)
5. εὑρεχετακε ἐῤῥήγη ἔνθετον ἐπερήκασκε ἔπτωταν ἐπερήκασκε ἐπὶ τοῦ ἑρατικὸς (Ch. 76)
6. εὑρεχεπομενὸς τετερὰ ἡπεκαμ ἐνταξε ἐνρώτ ἐνρώτ ἐνταξε ἐνρώτ ἐνταξε ἐνταξε ἐνταξε (Ch. 119)
7. εὑρεχεογιδοῖν ἡτεσίμεν ἐπειδῆ ἐπειδῆ ἐπειδῆ ἐπειδῆ ἐπειδῆ ἐπειδῆ ἐπειδῆ (Ch. 157)
8. εὑρεχεμνθαικτικὸς ἡμεῖς ἤνταξαν ἡμεῖς ἤνταξαν ἡμεῖς ἤνταξαν ἡμεῖς ἤνταξαν ἡμεῖς ἤνταξαν (Cat. 43)
9. εὑρεχεπρεθετε ἐν ἐν ἤπειρο ἐν ἤπειρο ἐν ἤπειρο ἐν ἤπειρο ἐν ἤπειρο (III 16f.)

45.1 ὡς εὑρε- “As if...”

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
TILL parr. 368, 459; VERGOTE parr. 212(6)

1. ἁνογεννοῦ ἐνεκοοῦ ἐωσῆ ἱμον ὡς εὑρεξενοῦ ἀν ὡς (IV 182)
{NB: ἰδί = ἵππο-}
2. οὐ γεωπν πε ἡ ὈΠΕ ΕΩΧΕΩΓΚΑΝ ἩΝΟΤΙΣ ΠΕ (Ch. 30)
3. ταὶ τε θε έτετέπτην εοσότε επραν ΗΝΝΟΤΗΣ τε ἡ ἩΝΕΕΕΤΕΠΤΗΣ επώα (Ch. 155)
4. ὉΝΕΩΚΕΝΗΕ ΕΩΘΒΕ ΝΕΩΝ ἡ ἩΝΕΧΕΑΝΟΝΕΝΕΜΑΙΗΤΗΝ ἩΝΩΛΟΫ (IV 73)
   {NB: εωσότε = εωσότε}
5. διοῦ δοκ εογα ΕΩΧΕΙΝΤΑΗΑΤΕ-ΟΥΣΟΠ η ΟΥΟΡΑΚΨ]\(\text{III 208}\)
   {OBS. εωσο- (without the preposition ἡ) has itself the rare meaning “as ἢ”}

46. εασωπε (… εασωπε …), καν (… καν …) DISJUNCTION OF ALTERNATIVE CASES: “Whether … or …”, “Be it …, be it …”

In this construction (especially common in instructive and preceptive contexts) εασωπε and καν are often combined with the circumstantial conversion.

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
STERN par. 626-628; YOUNG, “Εἰσαπε”

1. εωσωπε ουροούτ πε η εωσωπε ουρούμε τε η εασωρε ούομ πε η εασωρε εασωρε εασωρε εασωρε (IV 56)
2. εωσωπε εγνοο πε εωσωπε ουροο γη (III 198)
3. εωσωπε μη πεω ωομ πε εωσωπε δε τεπρω τε (IV 110)
   {NB: μη = men}
   {OBS. Here, as in several other texts, the alternatives are expressed by the special “impersonal” (“It’s…”): Nominal Sentence pattern, in which the theme (πε, τε) resumes the rhyme: see section 3.5}
4. ηνογειω δε ον νιμ εασωρηκαν εοσοκ εοσοκ εασωρος εωσωπε μη δε εωσωποι πε εονημουκ εοσωρομ…
5. εωσωπε μη εασωτε ηνετεσω σε ειε σενατμαειον εωσωπε δε ηνατησετατικεισω σε ειε σενατμαειον (IV 3)
6. εωσωπε ευσροτη καλως ον (IV 109)
7. εωσωπε ενησισμυηοτε η επνοοεισ ηνογηι ενηνυη εβουη ηντεγυαθη ζεω ηντεγυαθη ατορ αοτη ρυερηστε ηνογα η
   τειδυ τε (IV 123)
8. καν ουροούτ πε καν ουροουμε τε (IV 154)
9. καν εασωρήμαο πε η ηνοτ ηνοτικε (III 222)
10. καὶ εὐφωνεὶς ἡ εὐμοτὴ (IV 153)
11. καὶ εὐσεβεύοντὸς ὁ ἱτος εὐγένειας εὐγενεῖς (IV 111)
12. καὶ επεξεργαζόμενος πεπονθὸς ἡμαχίας πε (IV 84)

47 REMOTE or HYPOTHETICAL ("unreal") CONDITION: see sections 41.1-3

48 CONCESSIVE CLAUSES: "Even though ...", "Even if ...": καὶ
eὐφωνε- "Even if (as is usual/apparent) ..."

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
STERN par. 628; STEINDORFF par. 496; TILL par. 452

1. νῆραρχος ἀν ἡ καὶ εὐφωνεὶς εὐφωνος ἠκέραστο (IV 11)
2. καὶ ἀγωγῶν ἡ ἡμέρας εὐμαχίας (IV 19)
3. γενέρωμεν ἠκέραστοι ἀν ἄρτος πεπονθὸς καὶ εὐνήτας
   ἡμαχίας τιρὴ ἡμαχίας γαρ (III 90)
4. καὶ εὐκοτοῖς (i.e. the people in the house) ἐρεπογοιοῖς ἄντερ
   ἐμπαισιε ἐμπαισιε ἐμπαισιε (i.e. the thieves) (IV 25f.)
5. καὶ οὐρανίῳ πεπονθὸς εἰς ὁξάκες πεπονθὸς εἰς τοιούτων (IV 89)
6. καὶ αὐραμές εὐεργείου μη ἑκατεῖρον εἰς ἑκατεῖρας τηρίστερον
   (III 93)
   {NB: ἑκατεῖρο = εἰς ἑκατεῖρο, Second Future in a rhetorical question}
7. οὐνεὶ παν ἁκαῖς τῆςραπαγαθον ἀν ἕπενογούγος ἐτ
   ἐνοῦ ἔκτενος ἑπαγελος ἐτούλλας ὑπὸ τούτους ἑκατεῖρας
   καὶ ἐκατεῖρας ἐμπαισιες ἐμπαισιες (Ch. 79)
8. τὸ ἄκατο εἰροῦν ἐκατεῖρας ἑκατεῖρας ἑκατεῖρας
   ὑπαντῶν ἑκατεῖρας ἑκατεῖρας ἑκατεῖρας ἑκατεῖρας
   ἐκατεῖρας ἑκατεῖρας ἑκατεῖρας ἑκατεῖρας (Ch. 198)
9. καὶ εἰσπεριφερθήτ ἑκατεῖρας ἑκατεῖρας ἑκατεῖρας ἑκατεῖρας
   ἑκατεῖρας (Ch. 68)
10. οὐσιογασίας καὶ ἑκατεῖρας ἐκατεῖρας (Ch. 68)
11. εὐκατεῖρας ἑκατεῖρας ἑκατεῖρας ἑκατεῖρας ἑκατεῖρας (Ch. 32)
12. εὐξερχαῖς νερῷ ἕρπος ἕρπες ἕρπες ἕρπες ἕρπες ἕρπες
   ἕρπες ἕρπες ἕρπες ἕρπες ἕρπες (IV 21)
UNIT (IV): THE INFINITIVE OUTSIDE CONJUGATION
(sections 49-51)

49 The infinitive as noun phrase: determination

50 The infinitive as nexus constituent: actor of a conjugation form, rheme or theme in a Nominal Sentence, topic, focus of a Cleft Sentence

51 The infinitive as object (governed) or complement of a verb

49 THE INFINITIVE AS NOUN PHRASE: DETERMINATION

In addition to the position following all determinators (1.1), the infinitive occurs adverbially after ε-, ἦ- (as object or complement, 50) and adnominally, after ἦ- (attributively, 1.2). It is negated as ἦ- + infinitive.

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
Stern par. 456-460, 467-468; Steindorff par. 223; Till, par. 348; Lambdin par. 13.3; Polotsky, “Conjugation System”, par. 7

1. πρε ... ἐβολά τιτερίν ἰγώ ποισώῳ τῇπνῳβε (IV 176)
2. πκάκ- πατ (IV 67)
3. πτήτῳδων (A II 233)
4. πεώ ὠπνειματζκον ἰνοπὶ εγκω ἰεωματζκον (IV 86)
5. ταρωμή ἦτε ἐμκε (III 65)
6. πομβαὶ ἦπρικτ ἤνογκο ἰμπογείβε ἤνογκιογεν ἰμογ-
   τωπ (IV 57)
7. ἧμνελετα ἐπᾶξουγ πνοκμεκ ἐτνανογ (Wcss. 9 172)
8. ἤνογκτακο τῆτεπτακο (III 183)
9. ἤνογκπιο λαρεκπιο ἤλεπργ (P 130.4 110 552)
10. πνιαγ ἦτσογν ἰγον ἰγογκ πμα ἰγογκ καταμίπε τμίπε
    ἰμώζω πεμεγκβζεν ἦτσω ἤλεπειοτε (IV 53-56)
11. ἧμενοποκ αν ἦν εκσέβε τίπζενσβζε ἐκσέβε ἐραι ἦντου
    γικοπτει γισάκε ἤμετκζε (III 213)
12. ἦνανυναγ ἦκαπκοι ἐβολά εράζωτ ἦνανυναγ ἐο ἦμοομε
    ετεμπ (IV 174)
13. ἤσογκια ἰγογκ ἰγο ἰγῳ ἐτσίπρξζ (III 94)
[OBS. Note that the negated infinitive is not coordinated like a zero-article noun, by 21- (section 2.1); consider also the difference in determination evident in text 20 between the “affirmative” and negated infinitives]

14. πογωμ οπεγγιτ οπεγγικον ομιν ομοου (A I 23)
15. επογωμε εβολ (Ch. 114)
16. εκεμακογ ιπωμε επωμε εκεμακογ ιλαοε επωμε (III 218)
17. εκεμακοε εροοε εβολ ιν ωτορτ ιομ (218)
18. ιγωμε τηρογ ομεγογεςβαγε (A I 32)
19. ιερκεια εινηρωμε (IV 20)
20. ιανογε ειρω ινειγε (A I 55)
21. οι πιτωμ ινιτ (A I 201)
22. ετοιαουμ εισω (A I 205)

[OBS. The coordination by 21- proves this to be true zero determination]

23. πσαγογ ο ρωιγε ο πτωσε οπεινοσ ονοε (A I 118)
24. πιαι γαρ επγο ιογαγγελοε 2ομογαμε (A I 165)

[OBS. πιαι ... e- note that the substantiation of the infinitive by determination does not affect its rection]

25. ογλογοε ετεβωκ ετεκκλεια ιογοειω ιομ ιν ιωμ ινοου

[NB: this is a homily superscription or title]

26. ιπωε ερα ιτη ιπι ειρα ινεγια (Z 462)
27. con men ιανογιωινα ταρινιν οιε ετιν οι de on

50 THE INFINITIVE AS NEXUS CONSTITUENT: ACTOR or THEME OF A CONJUGATION FORM, THEME or RHEME OF A NOMINAL SENTENCE, FOCUS OF A CLEFT SENTENCE, TOPIC

Bibliography:
Stern par. 453; Till par. 336-337; Vergote par. 185(4); Shisha-Halevy, “Patterns”

1. ιανογιωκ ερα εινογκοου εμχοε ε...ιανοιε οι ερα

2. εμχειανογπιε αλα ειπε εινη ιογρωμε εμγοαβ

αω ειπε ται εινη ιογρωμε ιακαβροε (Wess. 9 98)
3. ἀποικεῖ τοῦ βιβλίου ἑάμπαζο (III 213)
4. προφητεύει γράφημα καλάρατε αν οντείματε ἑνήρμονε 
(III 16)
5. πεμκαρ ὅπεξτρατόν παπάς θαυμάζει ἑβάλλεξε 
ἐκκλησία ρωσφες ἑκαλαξε οντείματα ἑκάστερα (A I 59)
6. οὐ εἰσὶν πειρατικές εἰσοδοχικὲς ἑκούχαν 
(Wess. 9 171)
   {NB: προ- prenominal state of ἅγιος}
7. ἡμέρα ἐν πε οὐ ἁπαθαγή καλῶς (IV 157)
   {NB: οὐ = οὖν}
8. τοπονοματικὸ εὐθός εὐθὸς πεὶραματικὸ ἑνόυτ 
(IV 172)
9. ἁπαθαγή συντομομενομένη συντομομενομένα συντομομ 
(Ch. 86)
10. τειχψυχε ἁμένως πειρατικές εὐθύγυμες αὐτὸ τειχψυ χε 
(Ch. 56)
11. ἡμέρας ἐν εὐθὸς ἁμερομομένης πειρατικὲς ἀλάλα 
(III 67)
12. τε μεν ἀκτίνας μεν ἀκτίνας ἀκτίνας ἀκτίνας ἀκτίνας 
(Ch. 122)
   {NB: τε- construct state of ἅγιος}
13. ὠγονοὺς ἡμόγαζον ὁμογενοὶ ἡμόγαζον ἡμόγαζον 
(IV 14)
14. ἁμνισθήσαντι ἡματοί ἐν εὐθύτεροι ἁμνισθήσαντι ἁμνισθή 
(IV 174)
15. εὐθὐψυχε πειρατικές εὐθυγυμενές ἐν ἡμέρᾳ 
(BM Cat. 198)
16. ὁμογενομενοὶ εὐθύτεροι εὐθῦτεροι εὐθυγυμεν 
(Ch. 183)
17. ὁμογενομενοὶ εὐθύτεροι εὐθυγυμενοὶ εὐθύτεροι εὐθυγυμ 
(IV 14)
18. παροιμα ἀογῖν πλοὺγος πειρατικός πειρατικός 
(IV 15)
19. ὠγονοὶ πειρατικοὶ (A I 102)
20. ἐν εἰσπραγμένοι ἁδραμτογρομένοι εὐθύτεροι εὐθύτεροι 
(IV 174)
   {NB: Note the difference between the masculine resumption in 
νομισματικοὶ and the feminine theme in ὁμογενομενοὶ resuming the 
feminine rheme in the “impersonal” Nominal Sentence}
51 THE INFINITIVE AS OBJECT (governed) or COMPLEMENT OF A VERB

The infinitive occurs as following a verb clause as direct object or introduced by ε· or η- (according to the individual syntax of the governing verb). When in complement (non-governed, adjunct) status, the infinitive is introduced by the preposition ε· (cf. “to” in “He came here to see me”)

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
Stern pars. 454; Till pars. 340-341; Vergote pars. 200, 202-204

1. ἢκω ἵμων ἄν εἵ ναί (Ch. 62)
2. ηφεσε ἵβδομ έογω ἰα (Ch. 62)
3. πεταναγω τ έκαρω ἐρο ἱπποβε (Ch. 63)
4. ἵβδομ ἱμοι έαματε (Ch. 63)
5. εδροτότ εαγ (Ch. 82)
6. ηταρκανει εκστί ἐροού εγαρεξ εροού εαγ (IV 204)
7. εταντ η ντεκαρα έογονέ ἀγ ρετον εκοο π (Ch. 83)
8. ετεσομ ηφεκτιμε ήπαι ήρογο ετκασχρον ήπογονων
   (III 204)
9. ηφκει ηφεκτρόμε (Ch. 28)
10. χατριοκα νησωρ ἐρο ... (Ch. 62)
11. ηφημογα ἀν ήμογε ερο δετεκαυρε χιντενογ (IV 132)
12. ϰαλειτ ηροκ ἂν ἵπωτ ἐρο ἰμο (A 1 41)
13. κογωμή (Ch. 21)
14. ηφιογουέυαυν ἄν (Ch. 68)
15. κενταρφαε άγω ρω (III 214)
16. ηφανκεκς ρα ἄρι ιαδενεργη ηόε ηποεος εγ ρετοκ
   μενεπαγελος ετής γαρ ἱνταρχη ηπεσυντ (A 1 29)
THIRD PART: ASSORTED UNCLASSIFIED TEXTS
(graded according to difficulty)
THIRD PART:
ASSORTED TEXTS OF ADVANCED SYNTAX
(graded I-III according to difficulty (complexity or extent))

GRADE I

(1) οὐδείς πάντας καὶ ἧπογεωσόμενον ἂν ἔκαθορίζω (Ch. 68)
(2) οἱ παρακολούθοι εἶναι ἔπειτα ἐνεπεξεργάζομαι εὐλογεῖ ἀν ἔγινομαι (IV 82)
(3) ἄνακοος ἂν ἀνέξαντος ἰσορροπία ἐπικοινωνεῖ εὐλογεῖ εὐθυμίας (Mun. 101)
(4) ἡ ἰγκλατὴ ἐκδότων εἰς ὑπάρχον εἰστὶν ἤκοιν ἐνεπείγεται (Wess. 9 162)
(5) οὔ περὶ τινὸς καὶ οὔτε ἐπικοινωνεῖ ἐπεξεργάζομαι ἔνα βοήθησον (Wess. 9 138)
(6) ὅσοι πᾶσαι καὶ ἀνέξαντος ἔπειτα συνεργάζομαι ἐπικοινωνοῦσα ἐπικοινωνεῖ τῷ
   ἅγιω (P 131.6 28 8)
(7) οὐκ ἀνέξαντος ἐπείγεται οὐκ ἐπείγεται οὐκ ἐπείγεται (III 195)
   [OBS. Note the masculine resumption of the zero-article feminine antecedent]
(8) οὔ περὶ πῶς ἂν περὶ πᾶσιν εἰκονιστείν ἔπειτα ἐνεπεξεργάζομαι ἔπειτα
   ἐπικοινωνεῖ οὐκ ἔπειτα ἐπικοινωνεῖ (III 144)
(9) ἀπογέταις ἂν ἔπειτα ἔπειτα ἐπαινεῖται ἔπειτα αὐτοὺς ἔπειτα
   ἐπανεποίηται ἔπειτα ἔπειτα ἐπανεποίηται ἔπειτα ἐπανεποίηται ἔπειτα (Ch. 69)
(10) οὐκ εἰς τινὸς καὶ οὔτε ἀνέξαντος ἐπείγεται ἔπειτα ἐπανεποίηται
    ἦν ἂν περὶ τινὸς καὶ ἀνέξαντος (A II 407)
    [OBS. The # NOUN - περὶ # Nominal Sentence “carries on”
    (resumes) the Cleft Sentence]
(11) ἐνεπείγεται ἐνεπείγεται ἐνεπείγεται ἐνεπείγεται ἐπανεποίηται ἐνεπείγεται ἐπανεποίηται
    (IV 38)
(12) μεταδίδωσιν ἂν περὶ τινὸς καὶ οὔτε ἀνέξαντος διαφέρεται (E 85)
(13) ἐνεπείγεται ἐπείγεται ἐπαινεῖται ἐπανεποίηται ἐπανεποίηται ἐπανεποίηται ἐπανεποίηται ἐπανεποίηται (E 84)
(14) εγεταμόν τνογμήμες επεντάγναυ εροφ δεκας εγερωπε ευχασμάα ἡνεγασμένης τηρον αγιω νεεις εραπει εξωον ἱνικος τηρον ετης (III 158)
(15) νόε γαρ ἱππετηταπτεχες χώσων ενερ τα τε θε ἱππετας ἱμος ἱππετατις εκφεύσων αν (A I 395)
(16) πετανάζερες εφεκτοι νόσων εφεκτοτ εροφος σαγρατητις ετοοτῇ ἱππετατις εροφο (IV 113)
(17) ωσπε ἱτοκ ἱππικος εκογάλας αγιω εκωανθεκ 2αγήν κακάλας επεοςον ἱπποῦτε (IV 189)
(18) κετονο ἱππώρις ἁγιασμεις ετεμιμετατοπών κετονο ἱππώρις ετεμιμετατοπο (P 130.2 69 181)
(19) μοοσε νητι εβολ ἱτοκ αγιω νεκτακάνος εροφος ἱετευμήσεις εσκατωδας ήε (E 67)
(20) ἱαρος νυχε βαρονερος ωριπλ εγαος ἱππετητατερεις εροφος εδοποι αγιω νητωτ εραι εξωον ψητεθον κατάζοο (III 78)
(21) μη μήρωμεν ερωταεψησηα λβόλετα ἱ πετελωβε εροι ἱδαεε ωσπε μιων πνεκαλας εει ἱπετήται εβολ (Ch. 131)
(22) μήρωμεναςειςενετητήμης (Wess. 9 171)
(23) ουπετκαλας (Ch. 24)
(24) δυναγεωλοιδινβαλιειςαγβαλεινδινετακεβολ (RE II 17)
(25)λιενδιογεοειςαγαναγααπαλινδιογεοειςαγωγωὸν (A II 449)
(26) ἱαροσωκεναδιαιςειςε (Ch. 69)
(27) εἰσαινογοισὼνιμετετήμοναεσφοδε (IV 113)

GRADE II

(1) τωφηνοιτ ἱτοοτου ννεσσις ετηφηγιςε νμιςας ηαι εσκατην ναντεραν χειρορε ηνωον νινε ετευγνδομ ννοογ εας αγιω νεετήτης ἱητ ων εραι ηνωοτας νιμ εγεφω ευνεγωδας δηνογοτε ννογοτε ννογοτε νινευτοτ (IV 115,)
(2) ννενητηγιςε ννης νινις αλας εντερας ννης ρωςομ νμερις δεκας ννεντδιον μπεκνοςκος αγιω δεκας ενεβολ επωγικας νυπεροφοτας γειεγενης νπερις αλας νπενθεοου αγιω ενιπκνατος ντεγμετατοπων (IV 117)
(3) δενητρ νας ηνος ενταμασον ννεναρα κατανεμης ρωςομ νπιςμος ννιςης ενεβολ αγιω δνακας ννεθεοου εβολ τσιταγον μεν νπεκανας ηκεπε δε νννεθογα-
ψων τῆς θυσίας ἐν τω θεῷ ἔπνοινε τιμᾶς λαξιν τῆς ἑπετήρος ἕνοομον (E 95)

(4) μηρώμη εὐγνώμενος ἱερεὶς ἱεράς ἐρωταῖος ἀρετικεῦεται ἰερεὺς ἱερεύνηει ιερῷς (IV 17)

(5) γενναρθαρος γενναντας γενναρθαρος γενναρθαρος ἱερεύνηει ἱερεύνηει ἱερεύνηει ἱερεύνηει ἱερεύνηει (III 205)

(6) οὐρανὸς πετευμένων θυατερίων ἱερεύνηει ἱερεύνηει ἱερεύνηει ἱερεύνηει ἱερεύνηει (Ch. 103)

(7) ἐν τῷ ἔρεμῳ ἔρπτων ἔρπτων ἔρπτων ἔρπτων ἔρπτων ἔρπτων ἔρπτων (III 104)

(8) ἱερεύνηει ἱερεύνηει ἱερεύνηει ἱερεύνηει ἱερεύνηει ἱερεύνηει ἱερεύνηει ἱερεύνηει (Cat. 42)

{NB: ἀν ἐν ἄνωθεν — Akhmimicism for the standard Sahidic e- (preposition)}

(9) ἐρευμάη ἐρευμάη ἐρευμάη ἐρευμάη ἐρευμάη ἐρευμάη ἐρευμάη (III 206)

(10) ἐνα γαρ ἐκείνων χειροτονήσει ἐκείνων χειροτονήσει ἐκείνων χειροτονήσει ἐκείνων χειροτονήσει ἐκείνων χειροτονήσει (III 176)

(11) πάθει ἐπιστρεφόμενως ἐπιστρεφόμενως ἐπιστρεφόμενως ἐπιστρεφόμενως ἐπιστρεφόμενως ἐπιστρεφόμενως ἐπιστρεφόμενως (III 205)
THIRD PART

πατὰ ἡμῶν εὐγνωμὸν ἤ ἐκεῖ ἡμῶν ἐγκακοῦ ἡμῶν ἄντι τοῦτον ἡμῶν ἐν ἑαυτῷ ἡμῶν ἐκεῖνος οὐκ ἔχει ἡμῶν ἐγκακοῦ ἡμῶν ἐποιήσει τινὰς μᾶς ἐν ἑαυτῷ ἡμῶν ἐγκακοῦ (IV 166)

(12) εἰσοδεύον ἥσυχον ἀνθρώπου ἁγίου ἡμῶν ἐν ἑαυτῷ ἡμῶν ἐγκακοῦ ἡμῶν ἐποιήσει τινὰς μᾶς ἐν ἑαυτῷ ἡμῶν ἐγκακοῦ (A 1 207)

(13) σωτῆρας ἁγίου ἡμῶν ἐποιήσει τινὰς ἡμῶν ἐγκακοῦ ἡμῶν ἐποιήσει τινὰς ἡμῶν ἐγκακοῦ ἡμῶν ἐγκακοῦ ἡμῶν ἐγκακοῦ (A 1 234)

(14) ἡμῶν ἐποιήσει τινὰς ἡμῶν ἐγκακοῦ ἡμῶν ἐγκακοῦ ἡμῶν ἐγκακοῦ ἡμῶν ἐγκακοῦ (A 1 234)

(15) οὗ ἡμῶν ἐποιήσει τινὰς ἡμῶν ἐγκακοῦ ἡμῶν ἐγκακοῦ ἡμῶν ἐγκακοῦ ἡμῶν ἐγκακοῦ (A 1 234)

(16) ἢμων ἐποιήσει τινὰς ἡμῶν ἐγκακοῦ ἡμῶν ἐγκακοῦ ἡμῶν ἐγκακοῦ ἡμῶν ἐγκακοῦ (A 1 234)

(17) ἢμων ἐποιήσει τινὰς ἡμῶν ἐγκακοῦ ἡμῶν ἐγκακοῦ ἡμῶν ἐγκακοῦ ἡμῶν ἐγκακοῦ (A 1 234)

(18) ἢμων ἐποιήσει τινὰς ἡμῶν ἐγκακοῦ ἡμῶν ἐγκακοῦ ἡμῶν ἐγκακοῦ (A 1 234)

(19) ἢμων ἐποιήσει τινὰς ἡμῶν ἐγκακοῦ ἡμῶν ἐγκακοῦ (A 1 234)

(20) ἢμων ἐποιήσει τινὰς ἡμῶν ἐγκακοῦ ἡμῶν ἐγκακοῦ (A 1 234)

(21) ἢμων ἐποιήσει τινὰς ἡμῶν ἐγκακοῦ (A 1 234)

(22) ἢμων ἐποιήσει τινὰς ἡμῶν ἐγκακοῦ (A 1 234)
(23) 

(24) [OBS. ἐγreducers are variant forms of the negated conditional, for the usual 

(25) 

(26) 

(27) 

(28) 

(29) 

(30) 

(31) 

(32) 

(33) 

(34) 

(35) 

(36) 

(37) 

(38) 

(39) 

(40) 

(41) 

(42) 

(43) 

(44) 

(45) 

(46) 

(47) 

(48) 

(49) 

(50) 

(51) 

(52) 

(53) 

(54) 

(55) 

(56) 

(57) 

(58) 

(59) 

(60) 

(61) 

(62) 

(63)
εβολ ἵτερονι εφοηγοῦτ ζώον ἑβολ ἵτερονι χα-

σοογ εφοηγούς εργον ἱππευοχι εταποθηκη ζώον ἑβολ ἵτερονι εφρωκχ ἵπτωξ χασσογ ζηνεταμάα εχρον ξιπήπαλοι νυσοβ τε τερόμ ζηνετήαα εχρον ξιπήπαλοι.
εὐσπετρεῖ διὰ τῆς προλογίας τοῦ βιβλίου τῆς εἰρήνης (Ch. 94)
(13) ἠμελεύει διὰ τῆς προλογίας τοῦ βιβλίου τῆς εἰρήνης τῆς οἰκουμενικῆς εἰρήνης, ἣν ἴσως ἄριστα ἀπειλεῖ τὴν εἰρήνην τῆς οἰκουμενικῆς εἰρήνης. Ο γενικός ομιλητής παρεξηγεί τὴν οἰκουμενικὴ εἰρήνην καὶ τὴν εἰρήνην τῆς οἰκουμενικῆς εἰρήνης. Ο οἰκουμενικὸς ομιλητής παρεξηγεί τὴν οἰκουμενικὴ εἰρήνην καὶ τὴν εἰρήνην τῆς οἰκουμενικῆς εἰρήνης.
(14) ἦσον γάρ εὑρισκόμενον ἐν τῷ πρώτῳ κεφάλαιῳ τοῦ βιβλίου τῆς εἰρήνης, ὡς καὶ ἐν τῷ πρώτῳ κεφάλαιῳ τοῦ βιβλίου τῆς εἰρήνης. Ο οἰκουμενικὸς ομιλητής παρεξηγεί τὴν οἰκουμενικὴ εἰρήνην καὶ τὴν εἰρήνην τῆς οἰκουμενικῆς εἰρήνης. Ο οἰκουμενικὸς ομιλητής παρεξηγεί τὴν οἰκουμενικὴ εἰρήνην καὶ τὴν εἰρήνην τῆς οἰκουμενικῆς εἰρήνης.
(15) Καθηματάτα χειρογράφησεν οἱ οἱ οἱ οἱ οἱ ῥήματα ἣν ἴσως ἄριστα ἀπειλεῖ τὴν εἰρήνην τῆς οἰκουμενικῆς εἰρήνης. Ο γενικός ομιλητής παρεξηγεί τὴν οἰκουμενικὴ εἰρήνην καὶ τὴν εἰρήνην τῆς οἰκουμενικῆς εἰρήνης. Ο γενικός ομιλητής παρεξηγεί τὴν οἰκουμενικὴ εἰρήνην καὶ τὴν εἰρήνην τῆς οἰκουμενικῆς εἰρήνης. Ο γενικός ομιλητής παρεξηγεί τὴν οἰκουμενικὴ εἰρήνην καὶ τὴν εἰρήνην τῆς οἰκουμενικῆς εἰρήνης. Ο γενικός ομιλητής παρεξηγεί τὴν οἰκουμενικὴ εἰρήνην καὶ τὴν εἰρήνην τῆς οἰκουμενικῆς εἰρήνης.


THIRD PART

(Ε 94f.)
TABLES

NB: "X-" or "X-" mean: "X is prefixed to the following element (either noun or demonstrative, indefinite, interrogative or number pronoun; or suffix-pronoun, respectively);
"-X" means: "X is suffixed to the preceding element";
"-X-X" means: "X is infixed between elements".

Table A: Pronouns; Determinators: Articles, Demonstratives; Personal Pronouns
Table B: Nominal-Sentence Patterns
Table C: the Base ("Tripartite") Conjugation
Table D: the Causative Conjugation
Table E: Existential and Possessive Statements
Table F: the Durative Conjugation
Table G: the Converters
Table H: the Adjective Verbs
Table I: Lexical Verb Morphology: Infinitive/stative Formal Classes
# Table A

**PRONOUNS: DETERMINATORS: ARTICLES, DEMONSTRATIVES, PERSONAL PRONOUNS**

### A1. ARTICLES:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Definite (&quot;the&quot;)</th>
<th>Indefinite (&quot;a&quot;, &quot;some&quot;)</th>
<th>Zero (generic, abstract, quality)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>π-/πε-</td>
<td>ογ-</td>
<td>Φ-</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

 singular, masc.  
 singular, fem.   
 plural, masc. + fem.  

### A2. DEMONSTRATIVES

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>&quot;THIS ONE&quot;</th>
<th>&quot;THIS---&quot;</th>
<th>&quot;THAT ONE&quot;</th>
<th>&quot;THAT---&quot;</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>(emotional)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>παι</td>
<td>πει-</td>
<td>πη</td>
<td>πι-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>singular, masc.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ται</td>
<td>τει-</td>
<td>τη</td>
<td>τι</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>singular, fem.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ηαι</td>
<td>ηει-</td>
<td>ηθ</td>
<td>ηι-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>plural, masc. + fem.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>παι</td>
<td>πει-</td>
<td>πη</td>
<td>πι-</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

("these", "those")

### A3. POSSESSIVE ARTICLES

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>possessed:</th>
<th>possessed:</th>
<th>possessed:</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>masc.</td>
<td>fem.</td>
<td>plural (masc. + fem.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>πα-</td>
<td>τα-</td>
<td>ηα-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1st sgl. (&quot;my-&quot;)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>πεκ-</td>
<td>τεκ-</td>
<td>ηεκ-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2nd sgl. masc. (&quot;your-&quot;)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>πογ-</td>
<td>τογ-</td>
<td>ηογ-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>fem. (&quot;your-&quot;)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>πεφ-</td>
<td>τεφ-</td>
<td>ηεφ-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3rd sgl. masc. (&quot;his-&quot;)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>πες-</td>
<td>τες-</td>
<td>ηες-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>fem. (&quot;her-&quot;)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>πετ-</td>
<td>τετ-</td>
<td>ηετ-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1st plur. (&quot;our-&quot;)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>πεν-</td>
<td>τεν-</td>
<td>ηεν-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2nd plur. (&quot;your-&quot;)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>πετν-</td>
<td>τετν-</td>
<td>ηετν-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3rd plur. (&quot;their-&quot;)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>πεγ-</td>
<td>τεγ-</td>
<td>ηεγ-</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
TABLES

A4. POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>possessed:</th>
<th>possessed:</th>
<th>possessed:</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>masc.</td>
<td>fem.</td>
<td>plural (masc. + fem.)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

possession:
1st sgl. ("mine")  
2nd sgl. masc. ("yours")  
2nd sgl. fem. ("yours")  
3rd sgl. masc. ("his")  
3rd sgl. fem. ("hers")  
1st plur. ("ours")  
2nd plur. ("yours")  
3rd plur. ("theirs")  
noun possessor

("he/she/they of"): e.g. ηπανογιε "he of (belonging/pertaining to) God", ταπακον "she of (belonging/pertaining to) my brother", αταπε "they of (belonging/pertaining to) Heaven".

A5. PERSONAL PRONOUNS

Class (a): "SUFFIX-PRONOUNS"
(pronominal actor-expression in base conjugation; pronominal object after infinitive; pronoun following prepositions; subject of Adjective Verbs).

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Singular</th>
<th>Plural</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1st person (&quot;I, me&quot;): -ι(-), -η*</td>
<td>-ι(-) (&quot;we, us&quot;)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2nd person (&quot;you&quot;): -κ(-) (masc.)</td>
<td>-τη(-), -τετη(-), -θυτη*</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>-φ(-), -ε* -τε* (fem.) (masc./fem.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3rd person -q(-) (masc.: &quot;he, him&quot;)</td>
<td>-γα -γ</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-κ(-) (fem.: &quot;she, her&quot;)</td>
<td>(masc./fem.: &quot;they, them&quot;)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

* -τ, -ε/-τε follow consonants and ("κατ") doubled vowels; -θυτη final η and the prenominal form of the infinitive as well as some prepositions.
Class (a₂): **OBJECTIVE PRONOUNS**
(pronominal *possessed* after possession verboid, see Table E; pronominal object after certain irregular infinitives, e.g. *c₂₁ “write”*).

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Singular</th>
<th>Plural</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>2nd person (“you”):</strong></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(masc.) -κ</td>
<td>(masc.) -κ</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(fem.) -ε</td>
<td>(fem.) -ε</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>3rd person:</strong></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(masc. “him”) -q</td>
<td>(masc./fem. “them”)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(fem. “her”) -ε</td>
<td>-ε, -εγ</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Class (b): **PREFIX PRONOUNS**
(pronominal *actor* in the durative conjugation pattern (present, future & modifier predication)).

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Singular</th>
<th>Plural</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>1st person (“I”, “we”)†-</strong></td>
<td>ℹ-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>2nd person (“you”)</strong></td>
<td>κ- (masc.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>τε- (fem.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>3rd person</strong></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>q- (masc. “he”)</td>
<td>τετ- (masc. + fem.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>c- (fem. “she”)</td>
<td>εε- (masc. + fem. “they”)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Class (c): **SUBJECT PRONOUNS:** pronominal “logical subject” (theme) with *nominal predicates*.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Singular</th>
<th>Plural</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>1st person (“I am-”)</strong></td>
<td>κιν-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>2nd person (“you are-”)</strong></td>
<td>κιν(κ)-, κιν(κ)ν- (&quot;we are&quot;)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>κιντκ- (masc.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>κιντε- (fem.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>3rd person</strong></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-κε (masc. “he is-”)</td>
<td>-κε (masc. + fem. “they are&quot;)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-κε (fem. “she is-”)</td>
<td>-κε (masc. + fem. “they are&quot;)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Class (d): Lexical ("independent") Pronouns
(lexemes for "I, you (masculine singular, feminine singular, masc./fem. plural), he, she, we, they"); also as personal-pronoun predicates in the delocutive Nominal Sentence):

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>Singular</th>
<th>Plural</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1st person (&quot;I&quot;)</td>
<td>ἄνοικ</td>
<td>ἄνων (&quot;we&quot;)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2nd person (&quot;you&quot;)</td>
<td>ἄνώκ (masc.)</td>
<td>ἄνωτο (masc.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>ἄνοτο (fem.)</td>
<td>ἄνωτον (masc. + fem.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3rd person (&quot;he&quot;)</td>
<td>ἄνοτον (masc.)</td>
<td>ἄνωος (masc. + fem., &quot;they&quot;)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(&quot;she&quot;)</td>
<td>ἄνωτος (fem.)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Note the morphology of the 1st-person pronouns: ἄνοικ, ἄνων — different from all others (ἄνωτος + suffix-pronoun).
TABLE B

NOMINAL-SENTENCE PATTERNS

B1. The Interlocutive (1st/2nd person) Pattern

\(\alpha \nu \delta \pi \epsilon \gamma \mu \gamma \alpha \alpha\) "I am his servant", \(\eta \tau \rho \gamma \nu \nu \nu \nu \nu\) "You are a spirit"

Pattern: # 1st/2nd person pronominal subject - predicate #
Subject: INTERLOCUTIVE (1st-2nd persons) pronouns (A5, Class c)
Predicate: definite, indefinite noun (not demonstrative, proper name, or zero-determined noun)
Negation pattern: # (\(\eta\)) subject - predicate + \(\alpha \nu \) #
Conversion: circumstantial: \(\epsilon\) + pattern ("I/you being...")
preterite: \(\nu \epsilon\) + pattern ("I was.../You were...")
Topicalized subject: # \(\alpha \nu \delta \kappa\) \(\alpha \nu \) Predicate # (etc.)

B2a. The Delocutive (3rd person) Pattern

\(\pi \alpha \gamma \sigma \nu\) \(\pi\) "He is my brother", \(\alpha \gamma \gamma \pi \rho \beta \theta \varepsilon \nu \gamma \nu \nu\) \(\tau \epsilon\) "She is a virgin",
\(\eta \nu \eta \nu\) "It is these", \(\alpha \nu \delta \kappa \) \(\pi\) "It is I"

Pattern: # predicate - 3rd person pronominal subject #
Subject: DELOCUTIVE (3rd persons) pronouns (singular \(\pi\) (m.), \(\tau \epsilon\) (f.); plural \(\nu \epsilon\): A5, class c)
Predicate: definite, indefinite, zero-det. noun; Proper Name; personal, demonstrative, interrogative, indefinite pronouns
Negation pattern: # (\(\eta\)) predicate + \(\alpha \nu\) + subject #
Conversion: circumstantial: \(\epsilon\) + pattern ("Whereas he/she/they is/are...")
relative: \(\epsilon \tau \epsilon\) + pattern ("Who, which is/are...")
preterite: \(\nu \epsilon\) + pattern ("He/she/they was/were...")

B2b. The Expanded Delocutive Pattern

\(\alpha \gamma \gamma \pi \rho \beta \theta \varepsilon \nu \gamma \nu \nu\) \(\pi\) \(\pi \gamma \nu \gamma\) "Good is (He, God)"
\(\gamma \nu \tau \epsilon\) \(\tau\) \(\epsilon\) "What is (it, or) our hope?"
\(\tau \alpha \iota\) \(\tau \epsilon\) \(\nu\) "This is (it, or,) the manner"
(“thus”)
Pattern: # PREDICATE - pronominal subject - nominal subject #
This is B2a, expanded: the nominal subject renders the pronominal (formal or "grammatical") one lexically explicit. (Other features are the same as for B2a)

B2c. The Topicalization Delocutive Pattern

πνώγετε οὐάριος πε "(As for) God, He is good". Ναί γενεψεφό-νοσε πε "(As for) these, they are sinners"

Pattern: # noun/pronoun topic - PREDICATE - pronominal subject #
The topic presents an element familiar from the preceding text or beyond it as the basis on which the predicate is communicated; the pronominal subject refers back to the topic, and agrees with it in gender and number.

Features as for B2a, except for conversions, which are rare.
NB (negation pattern): # topic - (?-) PREDICATE + άν + pronominal subject #

B3. The Copular Pattern

πεγνώγετε πε ρωμή "Their god is man". πεκπάν πε παυαον "His name is Paul, ἀνόκ πε ραββίθα "I am Gabriel": an equational-identifying predication clause (S = P)

Pattern: # subject - copula - PREDICATE
Subject: definite (very rarely indefinite/zero-determined) noun. personal or demonstrative pronoun
Predicate: Proper Name, definite/indefinite/zero-determined noun (especially infinitives)
Copula: τις (τε) (νε) (τε generalized)
Negation pattern: # τις subject + άν + copula - PREDICATE #
Conversion: circumstantial: ε + PATTERN ("S being P")
relative: ετε + PATTERN ("Whose S is P")
preterite: νε + PATTERN ("S was P")
**Pattern Overview (B1-2a):** "P" = Predicate, "S" = Subject

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Subject</th>
<th>Simple</th>
<th>Expanded</th>
<th>Topicalized</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Interlocutive (&quot;I am; we, you are&quot;)</td>
<td>(\text{\textit{Anf}} - \text{P})</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>(\text{\textit{Anok}}, \text{\textit{Anf}} - \text{P})</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Deictic (&quot;he, she is, they are&quot;)</td>
<td>(\text{P ne})</td>
<td>(\text{P ne}, S)</td>
<td>(S, P ne)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
TABLE C

THE BASE ("TRIPARTITE") CONJUGATION

A verb-clause pattern set, combining actor with verb phrase.
actor: suffix-pronoun, Proper Name or noun/demonstrative, indefinite, interrogative pronouns
verb: base discontinuously combined with any infinitive (here represented by 蜋蜏 “hear”)

(l) The main-sentence conjugation
Distinctive properties: (a) all are independent clauses, (b) all are completely or partly convertible, (c) all are negated by SPECIAL NEGATIVE BASES.

C(l)1. The Perfect: “蜋蜏” “蜏蜏”

(a) Affirmative base:

蜋蜏

“He heard, has heard”

蜏蜏

“The man heard, has heard”

Conversions:

Circumstantial

蜏蜏

“he/the man having heard”.

“after he/the man had heard”, “... and he/the man heard”

Relative

蜏蜏

“who heard, has heard”, “whom, whose ... he/the man heard, has heard”

Second Tense

蜏蜏

“It is ... that he/the man heard, has heard”

Preterite

蜏蜏

“He/the man had heard”

(b) Negative base:

蜏蜏

“He did not hear, has not heard”

蜏蜏

“The man did not hear, has not heard”
Conversions:
CIRCUMSTANTIAL
(e)-μή-/ε-ΜΠΕ-... ουτής "unless, if not he/the man heard, has heard", "he/the man not having chosen"
RELATIVE
ετε/ετε-ΜΠΕ-... ουτής "who did not hear, has not heard", "whom, whose... he/the man did not hear, has not heard"
SECOND TENSE (rare)
ετε-ΜΠΕ-/ετε-ΜΠΕ-... ουτής "It is... that he/the man did not hear, has not heard"
PRETERITE
νε-ΜΠΕ-/νε-ΜΠΕ-... ουτής "He/the man had not heard"

C(12). THE AORIST: "ῳδελεοτής" " RoundedRectangle
(a) affirmative base:
ῳδεοτής "He (usually, by nature, by disposition, as consequence) hears"
ὦηεοτής "The man (usually, by nature, by disposition, as consequence hears"

Conversions:
CIRCUMSTANTIAL
ε-ῳδεοτής "after indefinite/zero det. noun, as relative"
RELATIVE
ετε-ε-ῳδεοτής "who (usually...) hears", "whom, whose... he/the man (usually...) hears"
SECOND TENSE
ε-ῳδεοτής "It is... that he/the man (usually...) hears"
PRETERITE
νε-ῳδεοτής "He/the man used to hear"

(b) Negative base:
με-ῳ-κοτής "He does not (usually...) hear, cannot hear"
μερε-πρωθε κοτίς "The man does not (usually...) hear, cannot hear"
Conversions:
Circumstantial:
ε-με-ε/με-ε...cwτθ "while he/the man does not (usually ...), cannot hear"
Relative:
ετε-ε-με-ε/με-ε...cwτθ "who does not (usually ...), cannot hear". "whom, whose ... he/the man does not (usually ...), cannot hear"
Preterite:
νε-με-ε/με-ε...cwτθ "He/the man could not, used not to hear"


Base:
ἵπατ-τ-τcwτθ "He has not yet heard"
ἵπατε-πρώμcwτθ "The man has not yet heard"

Conversions:
Circumstantial:
ε-ἵπατ-ε/ε-ἵπατε-εcwτθ "before he/the man has heard" (usually preceded by the adverb Ἐνεθ "before")
Relative:
ετε-ἵπατ-ε/ετε-ἵπατε-ε...cwτθ "who has not yet heard". "whom, whose ... he/the man has not yet heard"
Preterite:
νε-ἵπατ-ε/νε-ἵπατε-ε...cwτθ "He/the man had not yet heard"

C(I).4. THE OPTATIVE ("THIRD FUTURE"): “ετεcwτθ” “ἵπετcwτθ"

(a) Affirmative base:
ε-ν έ-ε-cwτθ "May he hear" (3rd persons).
ετε-πρώμcwτθ "Would you hear" (2nd persons)
ετε-πρωμε cwτθ "May the man hear"
Conversions: none
Following ἄε and ἄεκα(α)ς: clauses of purpose or willed result: "... so that he (may) hear"

(b) Negative base:

_category in which the base verb is found in the sentence_  "May he not hear", "He shall not hear"

_"I will not hear"

_"May the man not hear", "The man shall not hear"

Conversions:
Circumstantial
(e-)nne- ... cwtī

rare, only after ἄεκα(α)ς in clauses of purpose.

Following ἄε and ἄεκα(α)ς in clauses of purpose or willed result: "... so that he may not hear"

(11) The dependent-clause conjugation:

Distinctive features: (a) all are dependent clauses, (b) all are non-convertible, (c) all are negated by the NEGATIVE INFIX -tī- preceding the infinitive (for a pronominal actor) or the actor (nominal actor).

C(11)1. "UNTIL": "παντείς υμᾶς"

Base:

_παντείς υμᾶς_  "until he hear (heard)"

_παντείς υμᾶς_  "until the man hear (heard)"

C(11)2. The TEMPORAL: "παντείς υμᾶς"

Base:

_παντείς υμᾶς_  "after, since he/the man heard"

Negative forms:

_παντείς υμᾶς_  "after, since he did not hear"

_παντείς υμᾶς_  "after, since the man did not hear"
C(II)3. The Conditional: “εἰγινεωται”

**Base:**

ε - q· γινεωται

εγινεω· ται· εται

“if (ever), in case, when(ever), (eventually) he hears”

εγινεω· ται· εται

“if (ever), in case, when(ever) (eventually) the man hears”

**Negative forms:**

ε - q· γινεω· ται· εται

εγινεω· ται· εται

“if (ever) ... he does not hear”

εγινεω· ται· εται

“if (ever) ... the man does not hear”

The Conditional is often preceded by adverb καν which marks a CONCESSIVE meaning (“even if ..., although”)

C(II)4. The Conjunctive: “νοιεωται”

**Base:** with PRONOMINAL actor: νι· with special pronominal forms

with NOMINAL actor: ητε-

**Pronominal forms:**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>SINGULAR</th>
<th>PLURAL</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1st person</td>
<td>ητα-, τα-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2nd person</td>
<td>masc.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>fem.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3rd person</td>
<td>masc.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>fem.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Negative forms:** PRONOMINAL actor: η· ηττ· εται· εται

NOMINAL actor: ητε· ηττ· εται· εται

The conjunctive: (1) continues a preceding verb form (normally not present, perfect or imperfect) as a special closely coordinated (“and”) verb sequence; (2) occurs after conjunctions and adverbs of Greek origin, especially ζωτε “so that”, negative μηνοτε, μηνωτε: είμητι “otherwise”, μορικ “hardly”.
TABLE D
THE CAUSATIVE CONJUGATION

D1. THE CAUSATIVE INFINITIVE: "τρεξωμεν"

*In conjugation:*

τρε-κσωμεν
τρε-πρωμε εσωμεν

"to make (/let) him/the man hear"

*After prepositions:*

ε-τρεξωμεν/ε-τρεξωμεν εσωμεν

"for him/the man to hear" or "so as to let him/the man hear"

ζην/-ο-νεξ-αντι/-τρεξ-/τρεξωμεν εσωμεν

literally "(in/after/instead...) that he/the man hear"

D2. THE CAUSATIVE IMPERATIVE ("JUSSIVE", "THIRD-PERSON-IMPERATIVE"): "μαρεξωμεν"

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>SINGULAR</th>
<th>PLURAL</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1st person</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>μαρι-κσωμι &quot;let us hear&quot;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>negative:</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>ἢπτ-τρεξ-κσωμι &quot;let us not hear&quot;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2nd person</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>μαρεξ-κσωμι &quot;let him hear&quot;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>negative:</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>ἢπτ-τρεξ-κσωμι &quot;let him not hear&quot;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3rd person masc.</td>
<td>μαρεξ-κσωμι &quot;let her hear&quot;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>negative:</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>μαρου-κσωμι &quot;let them hear&quot;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3rd person fem.</td>
<td>μαρεξ-κσωμι &quot;let her not hear&quot;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>negative:</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>ἢπτ-τρεξ-κσωμι &quot;let them not hear&quot;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
D3. THE FUTURE ("CAUSATIVE") CONJUNCTIVE: “ﺕﺍﺭ牤-ﻕﻭﺕѣ”

This form expresses the guaranteed result of obeying a command, also general guaranteed (desirable) result. In the first persons, it expresses a deliberative question.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>SINGULAR</th>
<th>PLURAL</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1st person</td>
<td>masc. 2nd person</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>تѧ-ﻕﻭﺕѣ</td>
<td>تѧﺭ牤-ﻕﻭﺕѣ</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>“shall we hear?”</td>
<td>“shall we hear?”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2nd person fem.</td>
<td>masc. + fem. 3rd person fem.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>تѧﺭѧ-ﻕﻭﺕѣ</td>
<td>تѧﺭѧﺭѧ-ﻕﻭﺕѣ</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>“...and you shall hear”</td>
<td>“...and they shall hear”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3rd person fem.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>تѧﺭѧ-ﻕﻭﺕѣ</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>“...and he/she shall hear”</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
### TABLE E

**EXISTENTIAL AND POSSESSIVE STATEMENTS**

**E1. The Existential Statements:**

- **οὐν**-  "There is" (with indefinite noun/pronoun, number nouns, zero-det. noun or determinated relative (πετ-)
- **μην**-, **μῆ**- "There is not" (with indefinite noun/pronoun, zero-determined noun or determinated relative (πετ-)

**Conversions:**

- **Circumstantial:**
  - **ε-οὐν**-/ε-(μ)μην- (μην-) "there being/not being"
  - **ετε-οὐν**-/ετε-(μ)μην- "whose ..., whom there is/is not"

- **Second Tense (rare):**
  - **ε-οὐν**-/εμην- "It is ... that there is/is not"

- **Preterite:**
  - **νε-οὐν**-/νε-(μ)μην- "There was/was not"

**NB:** for the Existential Durative Predication, see Table F.

**Ela**  ιεικ-, **ιεικ-μηντε** "Here is ...", with nouns and lexical pronouns.

**E2. The Possession Verboids:**

- **οὐνταυ**  "He has"
  - **(μ)μηταυ**  "He does not have"

**PRONOMINAL POSSESSOR:**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>SINGULAR POSSESSOR</th>
<th>PLURAL POSSESSOR</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1st person οὐντ(Δ)ι neg. (μ)μητ(Δ)ι</td>
<td>οὐνταν neg. (μ)μηταν</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(&quot;I/We have, do not have&quot;)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2nd person, masc. οὐντ(Δ)κ neg. (μ)μητ(Δ)κ</td>
<td>οὐντε neg. (μ)μητε</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>fem. οὐντε neg. (μ)μητε</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(&quot;You have, do not have&quot;) masc. + fem. οὐντετν/(μ)μητετν</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
3rd person masc. οὐντ(α)q neg. (Ἡ)μήντ(α)q
fem. οὐντ(α)c neg. (Ἡ)μήντ(α)c
("He/She has, does not have"),
("They have, do not have") masc. οὐντ(α)γ/(Ἡ)μήντ(α)γ

NOMINAL, DEMOANSTRATIVE, INDEFINITE-PRONOUN POSSESSOR:
οὐντε- neg. (Ἡ)μήντε-προμε
"The man has, does not have"
Possessed: nouns, demonstrative, indefinite pronouns; personal pronouns (the objective pronouns, Table A5 Class a1)

Conversions:

CIRCUMSTANTIAL:
ε•οὐντα•/ε•οὐντε• neg. ε•μήντα•/(Ἡ)μήντα•/εμήντε•/(Ἡ)μήντε•)
"he/the man having, not having"

RELATIVE:
ετε•οὐντα•/ετε•οὐντε• neg. ετε(Ἡ)μήντα•/ετε(Ἡ)μήντε•
"who has, does not have", "whom he/the man has, does not have"

SECOND TENSE (rare):
ε•οὐντα• neg. ε•(Ἡ)μήντα•
"It is... that he/the man has, does not have"

PREFERITE
νε•οὐντα•/νε•οὐντε• neg. νε•(Ἡ)μήντα•/νε•(Ἡ)μήντε•
"He/The man had, did not have"
TABLE F

THE DURATIVE CONJUGATION

( THE "BIPARTITE" PATTERN )

Pronominal actor: prefixed pronouns (Table A5 Class b)
Nominal actor: (a) definite noun, demonstrative pronoun or proper name; (b) existential (οὐν-, negative (多种形式) + indefinite, zero noun or indefinite pronoun
Predicates: the durative infinitive; the stative; stative auxiliary (να-) + infinitive (future tense); adverb phrase

FI. Predicate: DURATIVE INFINITIVE: THE PRESENT TENSE

DURATIVE (PROGRESSIVE) ACTION

PRONOMINAL ACTOR:

†ςωτή, κςωτή, τςωτή ...

“"I am hearing"; "You are hearing"; "He is hearing" (etc.)

Negatived:

(νη)†ςωτή ἁν, νη/κςωτή ἁν, (νη)τςωτή ἁν, (νη)γςωτή ἁν ...

"I am not hearing"; "You are not hearing"; "He is not hearing" (etc.)

NOMINAL ACTOR:

πρωμεςςωτή

"The man is hearing"

οὐν-ογρομεςςωτή

"A man is hearing" (existential: "There is a man hearing")

ογρομεςςωτή

"A man is hearing" (existential: "There is a man hearing")

Negatived:

(νη)πρωμεςςωτή ἁν

"The man is not hearing"

(νη)μη-ρωμεςςωτή

"No man is hearing" (existential: "There is not [a] man hearing")

Conversions:

CIRCUMSTANTIAL:

PRONOMINAL ACTOR:

ε-ιςωτή, ε-κςωτή

"I hearing", "you hearing" (etc.)
**Negativized:**
e-ντεcwτṁ ἂν or e-ωττṁ ἂν “I not hearing” (etc.)
**Nominal Actor:**
epe-πρwμε cwτṁ “the man hearing”
eουγ-ογρwμε cwτṁ “a man hearing” (existential)
**Negativized:**
e-μπρwμe cwτṁ ἂν or epe-πρwμe cwτṁ ἂν “the man not hearing”
(e- τ̣η)μη-πwμe cwτṁ “no man hearing” (existential)

The circumstantial conversion in all forms is also used to expand and describe an indefinite/zero noun or indefinite pronoun: ογρwμe, ετεcwτṁ “a man (who is) hearing”.

**Relative: Definite Antecedent Only** (incl. definite articles, Proper Names and demonstratives; see Circumstantial for indefinite antecedents)
(a) Antecedent = Actor of the Conjugation Form (ετ-/ετε-):
πρwμe ετεcwτṁ “the man who is hearing”, π-ετεcwτṁ “he who is hearing”, neg. π(ρwμe) ετε-μηcwτṁ ἂν/ετ-cwτṁ ἂν
(b) Antecedent = Object/Complement of the Verbal Predicate:
**Pronominal Actor (ετ-/ετε-):**
πρwμe ετε-ετέκετη-ετγcwτmn ομoq “the man whom I am/you are/he is hearing”.
π-ετε-ετέκετη-ετγcwτmn ομoq “he whom I am/you are/he is hearing”
**Negativized:** π(ρwμe) ετε-ετέκετη-ετγcwτmn ομoq ἂν or π(ρwμe) ετε-ετέκετη-ετγcwτmn ομoq ἂν “the man/he whom I am/you are/ he is not hearing”

**Nominal Actor (ετε-/ετε-ετε):**
πρwμe ετεεε-πνwντε cwττmn ομoq “the man whom God is hearing”, π-ετεεε-πνwντε cwττmn ομoq “he whom God is hearing”
πςwβ ετεουγ-ογρwμe ειρε ομoq “The work which a man is doing” (existential)
**Negativized:**
π(ρwμe) ετε-μπνwντε cwττmn ομoq ἂν or π(ρwμe) ετεεε-πνwντε cwττmn ομoq ἂν “the man whom God is not hearing”.
πςwβ ετεκεε-πwμe ειρε ομoq “the work which no man is doing” (existential)
SECOND TENSE:
pronominal actor:
ε-ικωτῆ... "It is ... that I am hearing" (etc.)

Negatived:
(ν)(νε-ικωτῇ ἄν...
"It is not ... that I am hearing"
(etc.)

nominal actor:
επε-πρῶμες κωτῆ... "It is ... that the man is hearing"

Negatived:
(ν) επε-πρῶμες κωτῇ ἄν...
"It is not ... that the man is hearing"

The Second Tense conversion is used to emphasize a constituent of the sentence, most often an adverb phrase.

PRETERITE:
pronominal actor:
νε-ικωτῇ (πε) "I was hearing" (etc.)

Negatived:
νε-ικωτῇ ἄν (πε), (very rare) νε-ντς κωτῇ ἄν (πε) "I was not hearing" (etc.)

nominal actor:
επε-πρῶμες κωτῇ (πε) "The man was hearing"

Negatived:
επε-πρῶμες κωτῇ ἄν (πε) "The man was not hearing"


PRONOMINAL ACTOR: ἵκοτῆ, κκοτῆ, τζοτῆ, ρκοτῆ... "I am chosen"; "You are chosen"; "He is chosen" (etc.)

Negatived: (ν)τζοτῇ ἄν, ρκ-/κκότῃ ἄν, (ν)τζοτῇ ἄν, (ν)ρκότῃ ἄν... "I am not chosen"; "You are not chosen"; "He is not chosen" (etc.)

Nominal actor:
πρῶμες κοτῆ "The man is chosen"

ογν-ογρῶμες κοτῆ "A man is chosen" (existential: "There is a man chosen")
Negatived:

(InBackground)Negatived
(InBackground)Negatived

"The man is not chosen"

"No man is chosen" (existential:

"There is no man chosen"

Conversions:

CIRCUMSTANTIAL:

PRONOMINAL ACTOR:

ε-ικοτπ... "I being chosen”, “you being

chosen” (etc.)

Negatived:

ε-νικοτπ... or ε-ικοτπ... “I not being chosen” (etc.)

Nominal actor:

ερε-πρωμειοτπ... “the man being chosen”

εογοιογήοιρωμειοτπ... “a man being chosen” (existential)

Negatived:

ε-μπρωμειοτπ... or ερε-πρωμειοτπ... “the man not

being chosen”,

ε-μπρωμειοτπ... “no man being chosen” (existential)

The circumstantial conversion in all forms is also used to expand and
describe an indefinite/zero noun or indefinite pronoun: ογρωμειοτπ... “a man (who is) chosen”.

Relative: Definite Antecedent Only (incl. definite articles, Proper

Names and demonstratives; see circumstantial for indef. antecedents)

(a) antecedent = actor of the conjugation form (ετ-/ετε-):

πρωμειοτπ... “the man (who) is chosen”, π-ετοτπ... “he who is chosen”,

Neg. π(πρωμε)ετε-νικοτπ... or ετ-ετοτπ... (b) antecedent = complement of the verbal predicate:

PRONOMINAL ACTOR (ετ-/ετε-):

πρωμειοτπ... “the man (by) whom I am/you are/he is chosen”, π-ετοτπ... “the man (by) whom I am/you are/he is chosen”

Negatived:

π(πρωμε)ετε-νικοτπ... or π(πρωμε)ετε-ετοτπ... “the man/he... whom I

am/you are/he is not chosen”

Nominal actor (ετε-/ετε-ετε-):

πρωμειοτπ... “the man (by)
whom the woman is chosen”, π-ετερε-τεχτίμε κοτπ (εβολ γιτοοτγ) “he whom the woman is chosen”

Negatived:
πρωμε ετε-ντεχτίμε κοτπ ων (εβολ γιτοοτγ) or πρωμε ετερε-τεχτίμε κοτπ ων (εβολ γιτοοτγ) “the man (by) whom the woman is not chosen”.

Second Tense:
pronominal actor:
e-ικοτπ ... “It is ... that I am chosen” (etc.)

Negatived:
(ν)ε-ικοτπ ων ... “It is not ... that I am chosen” (etc.)

nominal actor:
ερε-πρωμε κοτπ ... “It is ... that the man is chosen”

Negatived:
(ν)ερε-πρωμε κοτπ ων ... “It is not ... that the man is chosen”

The Second Tense conversion is used to emphasize a constituent of the sentence, most often an adverb phrase.

Preterite:
pronominal actor:
νε-ικοτπ (νε) “I was chosen” (etc.)

Negatived:
νε-ικοτπ ων (νε) “I was not chosen” (etc.)

nominal actor:
νερε-πρωμε κοτπ (νε) “The man was chosen”

Negatived:
νερε-πρωμε κοτπ ων (νε) “The man was not chosen”

F3. Predicate: STATIVE AUXILIARY + INFINITIVE: PRESENT-BASED (imminent) FUTURE

pronominal actor:
†νακωτμ, κνακωτμ, τενακ- ωτμ, κνακωτμ ... “I’ll hear” (“I am going/about to hear”); “You’ll hear”; “He’ll hear” (etc.)
Negatived:
(₦)钁νεκωτ⟷ν ἃν, ἃν-κνακωτ⟷ν “"I'll not hear"" ("I am not going ἃν, (₦)τεκακωτ⟷ν ἃν, (₦)να- to hear"; "You'll not hear";
cωτ⟷ν ἃν... "He'll not hear" (etc.)
Nominal actor:
πρωμε νακωτ⟷ν “The man'll hear"
ογυν' ογρωμε νακωτ⟷ν “A man'll hear” (existential:
“There's a man about to hear”)

Negatived:
(₦)πρωμε νακωτ⟷ν ἃν “The man'll not hear"
(₦)ὅπ-πρωμε νακωτ⟷ν “No man'll hear” (existential:
“There isn't a man about to hear”).

Conversions:
Circumstantial:
Pronominal actor:
ε-νακωτ⟷ν “I going/about to hear” (etc.)

Negatived:
ε-ντανακωτ⟷ν ἃν or ε-νακωτ⟷ν ἃν “I not going to hear” (etc.)
Nominal actor:
επε-πρωμε νακωτ⟷ν “the man going/about to hear”
εογυν' ογρωμε νακωτ⟷ν “a man going/about to hear”

Negatived:
ε-νπρωμε νακωτ⟷ν ἃν or ερε-πρωμε νακωτ⟷ν ἃν “the man
not going/about to hear”
(ε-)��πρωμε νακωτ⟷ν “no man going/about to hear”
(existential)

The circumstantial conversion in all forms is also used to expand and
describe an indefinite/zero noun or indefinite pronoun: ογρωμε επνακωτ⟷ν “a man (who is) about to hear", "a man who will hear”.

Relative: definite antecedent only (incl. definite articles, Proper
Names and demonstratives; see circumstantial for indef. antecedents)

(a) antecedent = actor of the conjugation form (ετ-/ετε-):
π(πρωμε) ετ-νακωτ⟷ν “the man who is going/about to hear,
who'll hear”, "He who'll hear", neg. π(πρωμε) ετε-νακωτ⟷ν ἃν /
ετνακωτ⟷ν ἃν
(b) antecedent = object/complement of the verbal predicate:
Pronominal Actor (ἐπ-/ἐτε-):

πρωμε ἐπ-/ἐτε-νανατομεν ὁς ὁ άνθρωπος ὁ ἐγκαθισταμένος ἐν τῷ ἐντός ἐντὸς ἀκοίμητος ἐφ' ἀπὸ ἄφρονος ἠκούω "the man whom I am/you are/ he is going/about to hear, will hear", π-ἐπ-/ἐτε-νανατομεν ἐφ' ἀπὸ ἄφρονος ἠκούω "he whom I am/you are/he is going/about to hear, will hear"

Negated:

π(ρωμε) ετε-νανε-/να-νατομεν άν ὡς π(ρωμε) επ-/ἐτε-νατομεν άν ὁς ὁ άνθρωπος ὁ ἐγκαθισταμένος ἐν τῷ ἐντός ἐντὸς ἀκοίμητος ἐφ' ἀπὸ ἄφρονος ἠκούω "the man/he whom I am/you are/he is not going/about to hear, won't hear"

nominal actor (ἐτε-/ἐτερε-):

πρωμε ετερε-πνούοτε νατομεν ὁς ὁ θεός ὁ ἐγκαθισταμένος ἐν τῷ ἐντός ἐντὸς ἀκοίμητος ἐφ' ἀπὸ ἄφρονος ἠκούω "the man who God is going/about to hear, will hear", π-ἐτερε-πνούοτε νατομεν ἐφ' ἀπὸ ἄφρονος ἠκούω "he whom God is going/about to hear, will hear"

πρωμε ετερε-πνούοτε νατομεν ἐφ' ἀπὸ ἄφρονος ἠκούω "the work which a man is going/about to do, will do" (existential)

Negated:

πρωμε ετε-νανε-πνούοτε νατομεν άν ὡς πρωμε ετερε-πνούοτε νατομεν άν ὁς ὁ θεός ὁ ἐγκαθισταμένος ἐν τῷ ἐντός ἐντὸς ἀκοίμητος ἐφ' ἀπὸ ἄφρονος ἠκούω "the man whom God is not going/about to hear, won't hear"

Second Tense:

Pronominal Actor:

ε-νακουμεν ... "It is ... that I am going/about to hear, will hear" (etc.)

Negated:

(ο)(ν)ενακουμεν άν ... "It is not ... that I am going/about to hear, will hear" (etc.)

Nominal Actor:

ερε-πρωμε νακουμεν ... "It is ... that the man is going/about to hear, will hear"

Negated:

(ο) ερε-πρωμε νακουμεν άν ... "It is not ... that the man is going/about to hear, will hear"

The Second Tense conversion is used to emphasize a constituent of the sentence, most often an adverb phrase.

Preterite:

Pronominal Actor:

νε-νακουμεν (πε) "I was going/about to hear", "I would hear, would have heard" (etc.)
Negatived:

не-инакоусти ан (пе) "I was not going/about to hear".
"I would not hear, would not have heard" (etc.)

NOMINAL actor:

не-пршме наоусти (пе) "The man was going/about to hear"; "The man would hear, would have heard"

Negatived:

не-пршме наоусти ан (пе) "The man was not going/about to hear"; "The man would not hear, would not have heard"

F4. Predicate: ADVERB-PHRASE PREDICATION PRESENT TENSE

PRONOMINAL actor:

 TMPнеима, КИПЕИМА, ТЕИПЕИМА, "I'm here"; "You're here"; "He's here (etc.)

Negatived:

(Н) TМПЕИМА АН, НИМПЕИМА АН/КИПЕИМА "I'm not here";
АН, (Н)ТЕИПЕИМА АН, (Н)НИМПЕИМА АН... "You're not here";

NOMINAL actor:

ПРШМЕ НИПЕИМА
"The man's here"

ОУН-ОГРШМЕ НИПЕИМА
"A man's here" (existential: "There's a man here")

Negatived:

(Н)ПРШМЕ НИПЕИМА АН
"The man isn't here"
(Н)НИ-ПРШМЕ НИПЕИМА
"No man is here" (existential: "There isn't a man here")

Conversions:

CIRCUMSTANTIAL:

PRONOMINAL actor:

е-ипеима
"I being here" (etc.)

Negatived:

е-нипеима ан or е-ипеима ан "I not being here" (etc.)

NOMINAL actor:

е-пршме нпепеима
"the man being here"

еоун-оагршме нпепеима
"a man being here"

Negatived:

е-нпршме нпепеима ан or е-пршмепе нпепеима ан "the man not being here"
(e) (ε) μὴ-ρωμε ἢπειμα“no man being here” (existential).

The circumstantial conversion in all forms is also used to expand and
describe an indefinite/zero noun or indefinite pronoun: ὁγρωμε
εὑρειμα a man being here”.

Relative: definite antecedent only (incl. definite articles, Proper
Names and demonstratives; see circumstantial for indef. antecedents)

(a) antecedent = actor of the conjugation form (ετ-/ετε):

πρωμε ετ- ἢπειμα “the man who is here” neg. πρωμε ετε-
νῃμειμα αν/ετ- ἢπειμα αν

(b) antecedent represented (resumed) in the predicate adverb phrase:

PRONOMINAL ACTOR (ετ-/ετε-):

πμα ετ-ήτη/ετή-ετή- ἢπομα “the place in which I am/you are/
he is”

Negatived:

πμα ετε-ήτη-ήτη/ετη-ετη- ἢπομα αν “the place in which I am/you are/
he is not”

NOMINAL ACTOR (εττε-/εττε+):

πμα ετεπε- πρωμε ἢπομα “the place in which the man is”

πμα ετεπε- ἢπομα αν/ετεπε- πρωμε ἢπομα αν; πμα
ετεπε- ἢπομα αν “the place in which the man is not”:

“the place in which no man is” (existential)

SECOND TENSE:

PRONOMINAL ACTOR:

e- ἢπειμα; ε- ἢπειμα ... “It is here that I am/you are/he
is”; “It is ... that I am here” (etc.)

Negatived:

e- ἢπειμα αν; ε- ἢπειμα αν ... “It is not here that I am/you are/
he is”; “It is not ... that I am here” (etc.)

NOMINAL ACTOR:

ἐτε- πρωμε ἢπειμα (...) “It is here that the man is”; “It
is ... that the man is here”

Negatived:

(μ) ἐτε- πρωμε ἢπειμα αν (...) “It is not here that the man is”;
“It is not ... that the man is here”
The Second Tense conversion is used to emphasize a constituent of the sentence: either the predicate adverb phrase itself or a subsequent adverb phrase.

**Preterite:**

*pronominal actor:*

**ne-iπειμα (πε)**  
“*I was here*” (etc.)

*Negatived:*

**ne-iπειμα άn (πε)**  
“*I wasn’t here*” (etc.)

*nominal actor:*

**νερε-πρωμε ἰπειμα (πε)**  
“*The man was here*”

*Negatived:*

**νερε-πρωμε άπειμα άn (πε)**  
“*The man wasn’t here*”
TABLE G

THE CONVERTERS

CONVERTERS(*): circumstantial relative Second Tense preterite

**CONVERTED CLAUSE**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>ε-</th>
<th>ετε-</th>
<th>—</th>
<th>ne-</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Nominal Sentence</td>
<td>ε-</td>
<td>(ε)NT-</td>
<td>(ε)NT-</td>
<td>ne-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Perfect (affirm.)</td>
<td>(ε-)</td>
<td>ετε-</td>
<td>ετε-</td>
<td>ne-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Perfect (neg.)</td>
<td>(ε-)</td>
<td>ετε-</td>
<td>ετε-</td>
<td>ne-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Aorist (affirm.)</td>
<td>ε-</td>
<td>ε-/ετε-</td>
<td>ε-</td>
<td>ne-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Aorist (neg.)</td>
<td>ε-</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>ne-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>&quot;Not yet&quot;</td>
<td>(ε-)</td>
<td>ετε-</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>ne-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Optative (affirm.)</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Optative (neg.)</td>
<td>ε-</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Durative conjugation**

(present, future, adverb predication)

(Table F)  
ε(ρε)- ετ-/ετε(ρε)- ε(ρε)- ne(ρε)-

**Existential/possessive clauses (Table E)**  
ε-/ε(ε)ετε- ε- ne-

**Adjective Verbs**  
(Table II)  
ε- ετ-/ετε- ε- ne-

The **Circumstantial** converter (sections 27-30) marks a clause as adjoining a predicate to and thereby modifying another ("main") clause or an indefinite noun/pronoun. (The English gerund ["-ing", as in "I found him writing a letter", "Walking home, I met John" or "Having tried everything, I finally chose on this method"] is often the best and structurally apt translation, but a conjunctival rendering ("while...", "whereas...", "since...") is sometimes inevitable.

The **Relative** converter (sections 31-33) marks a clause as adnominal and attributive (describing) to a definite noun or pronoun.

(*) The converter forms given are the pronominal (prefixal) and pronominal ones attested in the corpus drawn upon for this Chrestomathy.
The **Second Tense** converter (sections 34-38) marks a conjugation form as of lower predicativity than other, non-verbal constituents of its clause, or, in the absence of other pertinent elements, puts into focus ("emphasizes") its own predicate. (The European Cleft Sentence construction ["It is... that...", "C'est... qui/que..."] is an apt translation, with the Second Tense the "that..." constituent.)

The **Preterite** converter (sections 39-41) marks the clause as divergent in time, place or actuality from a mainstream frame of reference.
TABLE II

THE ADJECTIVE VERBS: SYNTHETIC VERBAL CLAUSE-FORMS
(Part One, Unit VI: sections 22-26)

I11.  nuun-qaq  "He is good, fair"
     nanu-/nanu-ny-ne  "The man is good, fair"

Conversions(*):
- Circumstantial: enu-\text{n}a\text{n}u-qaq  "He being good, fair"
- Relative: et-\text{n}a\text{n}u-qaq  "who is good, fair", etc-nanu-/na-
     n\text{u}-qaq  "whose... is good, fair"
- Second Tense: enu-\text{n}a\text{n}u-qaq  "It is... that he is good, fair"
- Preterite: ne-\text{n}a\text{n}u-qaq  "He was good, fair"

H2.  n\text{u}\text{w}w-oy  "They are numerous"
     n\text{u}\text{w}w-e-n\text{m}u-oy  "The water is plentiful"

Conversions(*):
- Circumstantial: en-\text{n}u\text{w}w-oy  "they being numerous"
- Relative: et-\text{n}u\text{w}w-oy  "who are numerous", etc-nu\text{w}w-e-/n
     u\text{w}w-  "whose... are numerous"

I13.  n\text{a}a(I)-qa  "He is great"

Conversions(*):
- Circumstantial: en-\text{n}a\text{a}(I)-qa  "he being great"
- Relative: et-\text{n}a\text{a}(I)-qa  "who is great"
- Second Tense: en-\text{n}a\text{a}(I)-qa  "It is... that he is great"

H4.  ne\text{c}w-qaq  "He is beautiful", ne\text{c}-\text{n}y-ne  "The man is
     beautiful"

H5.  ne\text{c}\text{w}-qaq  "He is ugly"

Conversions(*):
- Circumstantial: en-\text{n}e\text{c}\text{w}-qaq  "He being beautiful"
- Relative: et-\text{n}e\text{c}\text{w}-qaq  "who is beautiful"

(*) The forms given are those actually attested in the source material; the wanting
prenominal forms, converters (and some other Adjective Verbs) do occur outside this

corpus
**TABLE I.**

**LEXICAL VERB MORPHOLOGY  INFINITIVE/STATIVE FORMAL CLASSES(*)**

**Note** the following "principal parts" of the Coptic verb lexeme:

(a) The absolute (dictionary entry) form or state of the infinitive:

- **κωτ** "choose"
- **πωτ** "build"
- **ταμο** "run"
- **κολακ** "inform"
- **κόλακ** "comfort"
- **πλοσ** "be sweet"
- **ειρε** "do, make"
- **ει** "come, go"

(b) The (pre)nominal or construct form or state of the infinitive, occurring before a nominal, proper-name or demonstrative/indefinite/interrogative-pronoun direct object (marked in the dictionary by - : **ειρε** -):

- **κετ** "choose (a man)"
- **κετ** "build (a house)"
- **ταμε** "inform (a man)"
- **κακε** "comfort (a man)"
- **πε** "do (a work)"

Note the characteristic ε vowel, replaced by superlineation over sonorants.

(c) The pronominal form or state of the infinitive occurring before a suffix-pronoun direct object (marked in the dictionary by - : **κοτπ** -):

- **κοτπ** "choose (him)"
- **κοτπ** "build (it)"
- **ταμο** "inform (him)"
- **κακεωα** "comfort (him)"
- **αλ** "do (it)"

Note the characteristic ο vowel in regular verbs, corresponding to α in the environment of original laryngal consonants or ι.

(*) as represented in the source material for the Chrestomathy. Note that verbs of Greek origin are invariable and have only the dictionary entry form
OBS.
(1) Forms (a) to (c) are "states" of the infinitive, which has all syntactic properties of a noun (e.g. can be combined with the articles).
(2) Forms (b) and (c) are excluded from the durative present (Table F1) for a definite and indefinite (not zero-determated) nominal object, form (c) excluded altogether from the durative present (the "Stern-Jernstedt Rule")
(3) Form (a) of intransitive verbs (esp. verbs expressing motion, posture or quality) is excluded from the durative present with the stative (form (d) below) taking its place as predicate.
(d) The stative or qualitative, occurring only as predicate in the durative conjugation (Table F), and, properly speaking, not a lexeme at all (not an "infinitive"). The stative, marked in the dictionary by a superscript crux (cọtị'), expresses "being in a passive state (for transitive verbs) or course of action or condition (for intransitives)"
  cọtị “(is) chosen”
  kịt “(is) built”
  nịt “(is) running”
  tọmụ “(is) informed”
  cọcọwa “(is) comforted” (also cọcọlị)
  ọpol “(is) sweet” (dur. present)
  o “(is) done”
  nọhị “(is) coming, going”
The stative is the distinctive form of the morphological verb class.
(TABLE I)

CLASSIFICATION(*)

Note the following vowel alternations:
\( \omega \rightarrow \omega ' \) following the nasal consonants \( n \) and \( m \)
\( \omega \rightarrow \omega ' \) immediately preceding the laryngeal consonant \( \ddot{z} \) and some cases of the "glottal stop" consonant (in which case we usually have \( \epsilon \) for \( h \))

Note also:
(1) \( \omega ' \) may be a root consonant;
(2) a root consonant may be realized as zero (i.e. absent in writing);
(3) final \( \epsilon \) does not affect the assignment of a root to Classes II and III;
(4) a "broken syllable" (i.e. vowel reduplicated), often with an \( a \)-vowel corresponding to \( o \) elsewhere, is indicative of a "glottal stop" consonant.

CLASS I: Three-consonant roots

\[ \text{cwtn} \quad \text{"choose"} \quad \text{cetn} - \text{cotp} = \text{cotn} ' \]
\[ \text{oywnz} \quad \text{"appear", "show"} \quad \text{oyen2} - \text{oyon2} = \text{oyonz} ' \]
\[ \text{wnz} \quad \text{"live"} \quad \text{omz} ' \]
\[ \text{moyoyt} \quad \text{"kill"} \quad \text{meyt} - \text{mooyt} = \text{mooyt} ' \]
\[ \text{pwzT} \quad \text{"bend, throw down, pour"} \quad \text{pewt} - \text{pawt} = \text{pawt} ' \]

CLASS II: Two-consonants roots

\[ \text{kwit} \quad \text{"build"} \quad \text{ket} - \text{kot} = \text{knt} ' \]
\[ \text{zwn} \quad \text{"hide"} \quad \text{zep} - \text{zot} = \text{znt} ' \]
\[ \text{pwt} \quad \text{"run"} \quad \text{pnt} ' \]
\[ \text{moypr} \quad \text{"bind"} \quad \text{mep} - (\text{mep}) \quad \text{mop} = \text{mnp} ' \]
\[ \text{moyz} \quad \text{"fill"} \quad \text{mez} = \text{mez} ' \]
\[ \text{wp} \quad \text{"count"} \quad \text{ep} - \text{op} = \text{mnp} ' \]
\[ \text{kw} \quad \text{"leave, lay"} \quad \text{k2} - \text{kaz} = \text{kh} ' \]
\[ \text{qwte} \quad \text{"wipe (out)"} \quad \text{qet} - \text{qot} = \text{vnt} ' \]

(*) Not in agreement with Stern's eight classes. The correspondence is as follows: our Class I = Stern's Class VI; II = Stern's I; III = Stern's II; IV = Stern's VIII; V = Stern's V; VI = Stern's VII; VII = Stern's III. The infinitives quoted are representative examples, to illustrate the specific morphology of the classes.
CLASS III: medial "broken syllable" (glottal stop) roots

τωσβε "repay" τεβε- τοοβ- τοοβ'
πωσνε "turn, pervert" πενε- ποονε- ποονε'
τωσνε "fit, be suitable" τοονε'
γωσττ "cut" γετ- γαατ- γαατ'

CLASS IV: "reduplicated syllable" roots:

καλκά "comfort" καλκα- καλκα- καλκα' καλκατ'
στορττ "trouble" στρττ- στρττρ- στρττρ'
σκορκά "roll" σκορκά- σκορκά- σκορκά' σκορκάτ'
νοθνηθ "reproach" νεθνηθ- νεθνηθ'

CLASS V: τ-ο pattern roots: causative lexemes

ταμο "inform" ταμα- ταμο- ταμηγ'
τεσκάτο "teach" τεσκα- τεσκα- τεσκηγ'
τογκατο "save, cause to be hale" τωγκα- τωγκα- τωγκηγ'
ξπο "beget, cause to exist" ξπε- ξπο-
κτο "return, cause to turn" κτε- κτο- κτηγ'

CLASS VI: "2οβα" — quality, state or condition (physical or psychological)

2οβα "be sweet" 2οβα'
νωθτ "be hard, severe" ναωτ'
ντονα "rest (oneself)" νοτα'
νκα2 "be hurt, ache" νοκα'

CLASS VII: "χισε" "j-absolute" roots, with final ε alternating with final τ in pronominal state:

χισε "raise" χες- χεςτ- χαςτ- χοςε'
πισε "bend" πες- πεςτ- ποςε' πακε'
εινε "bring" η- ητε'

IRREGULAR Class (selection):

cεπε "do, make" π- πα- πα'
† "give" † ταα- το'
κι "take" κι- κιτ'
cζα1 "write" κζα1- κεζ- κζα- κχα'

είμε  "know"
ψήφε  "serve" ψήφε- ψήφητ=
σωκ  "go" ΝΑ'
εϊ  "come. go" ΝΗΥ'
βένν  "hurry"
ζμοος  "sit"
αζηρατ=  "stand"
νογ  "die"
αμαζτε  "hold"
ψογψογ  "pride (oneself)"
GLOSSARY

A. GLOSSARY OF MORPHEMES (GRAMMATICAL ELEMENTS)

This glossary includes elements of both native and Greek origin, bound morphemes (e.g. articles, conjugation bases, converters, prepositions, prefix and suffix pronouns, enclitic and proclitic pronouns, auxiliary verbs, derivational prefixes, negatives, etc.); personal, indefinite, demonstrative and interrogative pronouns; particles, conjunctions, adverbs; Adjective Verbs; existential and possession statements, and more. Numbers refer to pages of Crum's Coptic Dictionary. The arrangement is alphabetical, by consonants and then vowels (as in Crum's Dictionary).

NB: (-) following a morpheme means "prefixed to a noun or pronoun"; (−), "attached to a suffix-pronoun".

\( a- \) affirmative perfect base
\( a- \) prefix of affirmative imperative (for certain verbs)
\( a- \) "about ..." (with numbers or quantities)
\( a- \) rare variant of preposition \( ε- \)
\( a- a- a- \) (adv.) but
\( a- a- o- ... a- a- o- ... \) "there is a difference between ... and ..."
\( ... a- n, ðin ... a- n \) negator of nexus in non-verbal clauses
\( a- n, a- ñn- \) "We are ...", proclitic subject pronoun in Nominal Sentence, 1st plur.
\( a- ññ- \) "I am ...": proclitic subject pronoun in Nominal Sentence, 1st sgl.
\( a- ññ \) personal pronoun, 1st sgl. "I"
\( ... a- ññk \) reinforcer: "... for my part" (French (quant) à moi)
\( a- ññn \) personal pronoun, 1st plur. "we"
\( ... a- ññn \) reinforcer: "... for our part" (French (quant) à nous)
\( a- nññt- \) (prep.) against, instead of
\( a- ññn \) part. introducing rhetorical question: "Is it the case that ...?"
\( a- ñn- \) 2nd sgl. fem. variant of perfect base
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>AT-</th>
<th>privative prefix: &quot;-less&quot;, &quot;un-&quot; (18b)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>AYu</td>
<td>(adv.) and, additionally (19b)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ay</td>
<td>(interr., pronoun) which? what? (22a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>_near how?</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>AXN-, ExN-</td>
<td>(prep.) without; presuffixal AXN- = (25b)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>AXN-</td>
<td>see AXN-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>...RAP</td>
<td>causal-explicative clause-connecting particle (&quot;for...&quot;)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>...AE</td>
<td>faintly adversative clause-connecting particle (&quot;and, but&quot;)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>E-</td>
<td>circumstantial converter</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>e-</td>
<td>Second Tense converter</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>e-</td>
<td>(prep.) to, against; marking object of verbs of perception; introducing infinitive; presuffixal EPO-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>E-...E-</td>
<td>affirmative optative base</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>E-...TH-</td>
<td>negative Contitional base (rare)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>E-...WAN-</td>
<td>Conditional base</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>EBOA</td>
<td>(adv.) out</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>EIMHTI</td>
<td>(conj.) unless</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ENE-</td>
<td>remote condition marker (&quot;If I had...&quot;)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ENE-</td>
<td>interrogation marker</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ENT(A-), NT(A-)</td>
<td>relative converter with affirmative perfect</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ENT(A-), NT(A-)</td>
<td>Second Tense converter with affirmative perfect</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ENZOCON, NZOCON</td>
<td>(conj. adv.) as long as ...</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>EPE-</td>
<td>form before noun, 2nd sgl. fem., indef., interrog. and demonstrative pronouns of (1) affirmative Optative, (2) circumstantial present, (3) Second Present</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Epat-</td>
<td>(prep.) to ... (person, with movement)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>EPO-</td>
<td>see e- (prep.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>EPYAN-</td>
<td>Conditional base before nominal, 2nd sgl. fem., inter., indef. and demonstrative pronoun actor</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ET-, ETE-</td>
<td>relative converter</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ETE-</td>
<td>Second Tense converter (with negative perfect)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ETBE-</td>
<td>(prep.) about, because of (61a); presuffixal ETBHNHT-; ETBEV why?</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
etere- relative converter in the present and future, before nominal, 2nd sgl. fem., interrog., indef. and demonstrative pronoun actor
etn- (prep.) to (the hands of) (477a); presuffixal etoot-
εω- to be able to (with inf.); ω- after vowel
εωμνε introducing conditional clause: "Should it be the case that ...", "Be it ..., be it ..."
εωχε- assumptive "conditional" prefix: "If (as we know) ...", "Granted that ...", "Given that ...": "Even though ..."
ευε εωχε- as if
ευογν (adv.) in, inside
ευρη- (prep.) in the face of ... (649a); presuffixal ευρα-
ευνα-/ευνε- see να
ευραι (adv.) up (to), down (to)
exη- (prep.) on, onto (757a); presuffixal exω-
exη. ηών- (prep.) without (25b); presuffixal exητ-.
exητ- see exη- (prep.) without
η. ἥ (conj.) disjunctive: or
h introducing subsequent rhetorical question: "Or is it the case that ...?"
οκ(τ-ε) 
οκε, κατακε as ..., like ... ("in/according to the manner of .../that ...") (638b)
-ι-, -ει-, -ι-, -ει 1st sgl. suffix pronoun "I", "me"
ειε- "then ..." (introducing main clause after εωχε-)
ειε. ειεχυτε "Here is ...", presentative (85a)
eιετε ... είετε ... (conj.) disjunctive: either ... or ...
κ- 2nd sgl. masc. prefix pronoun: "you" (in durative pattern)
-κ - κ 2nd sgl. masc. suffix pronoun "you"
κε. δε- (un)other ... too; plur. κοογε (90b)
-πικε- see π-
καιαο particle "for indeed"
καν (adv.. conj.) even-though; at least (with imperative and jussive)
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th><strong>TABLES</strong></th>
<th><strong>TABLES</strong></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>κατα-</strong></td>
<td>καν... καν... “Be it..., be it...”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(prep.) according to; presuffixal <strong>καταρο-</strong> see <strong>κε-</strong></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>λεγε</strong></td>
<td>anything, something (146a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>μαι</strong></td>
<td>imperative prefix of causative verbs (“μαται-” “tell me!”)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>μη, μήτι</strong></td>
<td>introducing rhetorical question (“Is it not the case (that?)”)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>με-</strong></td>
<td>negative aorist base, presuffixal</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>…<strong>μιν</strong> μιο-</td>
<td>reinf: “…(him)self”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>μην, μην</strong></td>
<td>“There is not…” “There does not exist…” statement of non-existence</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>μη</strong></td>
<td>(prep.) with; presuffixal <strong>μημα-</strong>, 2nd sgl. fem. <strong>μημε</strong> (169b)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>between nouns, coordinating: “... and ...”</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>…<strong>μεν, μη</strong></td>
<td>particle, approx. “on the other hand, ...”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>μον</strong></td>
<td>sentence-word: “No” (168a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>μονο-</strong></td>
<td>(prep.) after, “following” (of time) (314b); presuffixal <strong>μονο-</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>with noun or infinitive) prefix deriving abstract nouns (“-ness”, “-ship”, “-dom”) (176a)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>*<em>(μ)μετα-/(<em>μ)μέτε-</em></em></td>
<td>“He/the man) has not: statement of negative possession (167b)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>μη-</strong></td>
<td>negative perfect base (presuffixal)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>μη-</strong></td>
<td>negative perfect base, before nominal, 2nd sgl. fem., indef., interrog. and demonstrative pronoun actor</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>μηποτε</strong></td>
<td>(adv., conj.) lest</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>μπατ-</strong></td>
<td>“not yet” base, presuffixal</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>μπατε-</strong></td>
<td>“not yet” base, before nominal, 2nd sgl. fem., indef., interrog. and demonstrative pronoun actor</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>μπρ-</strong></td>
<td>negative imperative prefix, with infinitive (“Do not...”)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>μπρτρε-</strong></td>
<td>negative causative imperative (jussive) prefix, with infinitive (“let him not...”); 1st sgl. <strong>μπρτρα-</strong> causative imperative (jussive) prefix (“Let him...”)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Term</td>
<td>Meaning</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>------</td>
<td>---------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἰπέ-</td>
<td>negative aorist base, before nominal, 2nd sgl. fem., indef., interrog. and demonstrative pronoun actor</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἰπα/ἰπε-</td>
<td>“(He/the man) does not know“ (201b)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἰπε-</td>
<td>“It is not right”, negative of ὑπε-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>...ἱγαλ-</td>
<td>reinforcer: “... (he) alone”, “... (he) by himself”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἴ (ἱ-)</td>
<td>“nota relationis” interrelating two nouns: “of”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἴ (ἱ-)</td>
<td>(prep.) as (predicative: “be as...”, “make... into” presuffixal ὴ-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἴ (ἱ-)</td>
<td>(prep.) by, in (215a); presuffixal ὴ-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἴ (ἱ-)</td>
<td>(prep.), direct object; presuffixal ὴ-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἴ (ἱ-)</td>
<td>(prep.) to (person) (216a); presuffixal ἐ, ὴ, 2nd sgl. fem. ὴ, ὴ, ὴ, ὴ,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἴ- (ἱ-) (ἐ-τ-)</td>
<td>definite article, plural (“the...”)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἴ-</td>
<td>base of conjunctive, before a pronoun</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἴ... ὴ, ὴ... ὴ</td>
<td>negativer of nexus in non-verbal clauses</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἴ- ἴ-</td>
<td>1st plur. suffix pronoun, “we”, “us”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐ-</td>
<td>possessive article, 1st sgl. possessor, plural possessed “my...” (French mes...)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐ-</td>
<td>possessive pronoun, plural “they of...”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐ-</td>
<td>see ἴ- (prep.) to.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐ-</td>
<td>infix or auxiliary of future tense</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐλ(λ)-</td>
<td>Adjective Verb “(He/the man) is great” (218b)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐ-</td>
<td>preterite converter</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐ-</td>
<td>possessive article, plural possessed: ἐκ- ἐκ- ἐκ- ἐκ- ἐκ- ἐκ- ἐκ- ἐκ- “your (masc.), his, her, our, your (plur.), their” (French tes, ses, nos, vos, leurs)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐαι</td>
<td>demonstrative pronoun, plural “these (ones)“</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐαι-</td>
<td>demonstrative article, plural “these...”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐ... ἐ</td>
<td>“They are”, plural enclitic subject in Nominal Sentence</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐ, ὴ</td>
<td>“to you”, 2nd sgl. fem. form of prep. ἴ-/ἐ-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐ, ὴ</td>
<td>demonstrative pronoun, plural “those (ones)”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐ, ὴ</td>
<td>demonstrative article, plural “those...” (emotional)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐνυ-</td>
<td>possessive article, 2nd sgl. fem. possessor: “your” (French tes, fem.)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
TABLES

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Term</th>
<th>Description</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>нογ-</td>
<td>possessive pronoun, plural possessed: “mine, yours, his, ours, yours, theirs” (French <em>les miens, les tiens, les siens, les nôtres, les vôtres, les leurs</em>)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>нёбёбёбёбёбёб-</td>
<td>(prep.) except, beside (35a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ним</td>
<td>interrogative pronoun: who? (225b); indefinite “so-and-so”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>н...ним</td>
<td>determinator and distributive quantifier: all ..., every ...</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>нёхма-</td>
<td>see (prep.) мн-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>наноы-/нане-</td>
<td>Adjective Verb: “(He/the man) is good, fair” (227a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>нода-</td>
<td>1st sgl., negative Optative base</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ноне-</td>
<td>negative Optative base</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>непе-</td>
<td>preterite converter before nominal, 2nd sgl. fem., indef., interrog. and demonstrative pronoun actor</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>нечоу-/нече-</td>
<td>Adjective Verb: “(He/the man) is beautiful” (228b)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>нода-</td>
<td>(prep.) after (314a); presuffixal нечоу-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>наит-</td>
<td>sentence-word: “Blessed is ...” (74a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>нт(1-), ент(1-)</td>
<td>Second Tense converter before affirmative perfect</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>нт(2-), ент(2-)</td>
<td>relative converter before affirmative perfect</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>не-</td>
<td>1st sgl. of conjunctive</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>нте-</td>
<td>conjunctive base before nominal, 2nd sgl. fem., indef., interrog. and demonstrative pronoun actor</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>нте-</td>
<td>(prep.) of, with (possession and appurtenance): presuffixal нта-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>нте-</td>
<td>“you (fem.) are”, proclitic subject pronoun in Nominal Sentence, 2nd sgl. fem.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>нто</td>
<td>personal pronoun, 2nd sgl. fem. “you”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>н...нто-</td>
<td>reinforcer: “…for (his part)” (French “<em>(quant) à lui</em>”)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>нток</td>
<td>personal pronoun, 2nd sgl. masc. “you”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>нтк-</td>
<td>“You (masc.) are”, proclitic subject pronoun in Nominal Sentence, 2nd sgl. masc.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>нтн-</td>
<td>(prep.) in the hands of ...; presuffixal нтовот-, нтовт-; before 2nd plur. pronoun</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>нтепе-</td>
<td>base of Temporal, pronominal &amp; presuffixal</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>нтог-</td>
<td>personal pronoun, 3rd sgl. fem. “she”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abbreviation</td>
<td>Description</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>--------------</td>
<td>-------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ņτετũ</td>
<td>&quot;You (plur.) are...&quot;, proclitic subject pronoun in Nominal Sentence, 2nd plural.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ņτωτũ</td>
<td>personal pronoun, 2nd plural &quot;you&quot;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ņτοοũ</td>
<td>personal pronoun, 3rd plural &quot;they&quot;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ņτοũ</td>
<td>personal pronoun, 3rd singular masculine &quot;he&quot;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>...ũτoũ</td>
<td>adversative particle: approx. &quot;on the other hand&quot;</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
| ũαѱw-/
 ũαվ " | Adjective Verb: "(They/the people) are numerous" |
| (ũ)ũαξpũ- | (prep.) before, in the presence of: presuffixal |
| ŋξοн, еξξοн | (conj.) as long as ... |
| ŋξw- | presuffixal of ŋĩ- (prep.) in |
| ũεβw- | Adjective Verb: "(He) is ugly" |
| ŋexisting nominal specification of 3rd person pronominal actor: "namely..." |
| ŋẹ | (adv.) again, still |
| ŋ- (ŋɛ-)^{1} | definite article, sgl. masculine, "the" |
| ŋ| with relative: "the one who..." |
| ŋامة | possessive pronoun, sgl. masc., "he of..." |
| ...ŋɛ | "He is...", "It is...", sgl. masc. enclitic subject in Nominal Sentence |
| ...ŋɛc | element accompanying the preterite converter; often "the background situation is, that..." |
| ŋɛ- | possessive article, sgl. masc. possessed: ŋɛk- (ŋɛk-) ŋɛc- ŋɛc- ŋɛc- ŋɛc- ŋɛc- "your (masc., her, her, our, your, your (plur.), their)" (French ton, son, nôtre, vôtre, leur) |
| ŋают | possessive article, 1st sgl. possessor, masc. sgl. possessed: "my..." (French mon) |
| ŋαι | demonstrative pronoun, sgl. masc., "this (one)" |
| ŋεί | demonstrative article, sgl. masc., "this..." |
| ŋή | demonstrative pronoun: sgl. masc.: "that (one)" |
| ŋί | demonstrative artic., sgl. masc. "that..." (emotional) |
| ŋί- ...ŋαγwτ | "the very same..." |
| ŋοւ- | possessive article, 2nd sgl. fem. possessor, sgl. masc. possessed: "your..." (French ton, fem.) |
πω- possessive pronoun, sgl. masc. possessed: "mine, yours, his, hers, ours, yours, theirs" (French le mien, le tien, le sien, le nôtre, le vôtre, le leur)

παρά- (prep.) beside, alongside, against

προς- (prep.) for (a period of time)

πεξε-/πεξε- "(He/the man) said (285a)

ῥ- with noun: auxiliary, deriving verbs from nouns: "do...", "make...", "be, act as...", (prefix of εἰπε)

-ῥηκε- "to (do) also...

-ῥιφ(ί)ν- "to (do) first...

-ῥιωγε- "to (do) rather..."

ῥω particle: "at all", "really", "...indeed": often marking the preceding element as focal

ῥή-, ῥῆ- "man of...". With placenames: prefix forming local nouns. With nouns: deriving nouns from nouns (295a)

ῥεῖ- "man who...". With infinitives: prefix forming agent nouns from verb (cf. English -er, -or). (295a)

κ- 3rd sgl. fem. prefix pronoun: "she", "it" (in the durative pattern)

-κ 3rd sgl. fem. suffix pronoun: "she", "it"

κε sentence-word: "yes" (316a)

κε- 3rd plural prefix pronoun: "they" (in the durative pattern)

-κε 3rd plural objective pronoun: "them"

-κογ 3rd plural objective pronoun: "them"

κά(ν-) "man of...", "maker/seller of...", deriving prefix (316a)

τ-(τε-) definite article, sgl. fem.: "the"

-τ 1st sgl. suffix pronoun (as object, following consonants and doubled vowels)

τά- possessive article, 1st sgl. possessor, sgl. fem.

possessed: "my..." (French ma)

τα- possessive pronoun, sgl. fem. "she of...

τα-, ἡτα- 1st sgl. form of conjunctive

...τε "She is...", "It is...", sgl. fem. enclitic subject in Nominal Sentence
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th><strong>TABLES</strong></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>τε-</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>τε-</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>ται</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>τει-</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>τη</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>τί, τι-</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>τι-</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>τι-</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>τογ-</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>τω-</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>τη-, -τη-</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>τη</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>τή-</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>ταρε- ταρες/ταρη-</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>... ταρη-</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>ταρ-</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>τρε-</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>-θυτην</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>τητην-</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>-τητην-</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>ογ</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>ογ-</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>-ογ-, -γ-</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>ογα</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>ογει</strong></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
**TABLES**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Word</th>
<th>Meaning</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ογε-</td>
<td>(prep.) against (476a); presuffixal ογή-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ογε</td>
<td>(conj.) neither, nor</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ογκοψη</td>
<td>particle: doubtlessly; therefore</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ομνονοσ</td>
<td>(adv.) not only</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ογη-</td>
<td>&quot;There is&quot;, &quot;There exists&quot;, statement of existence (481a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ογω</td>
<td>some(one), any(one); something, anything (482a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ογηται-/ογητε-</td>
<td>&quot;(He/the man) has&quot;, verb of possession (481a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ογηπ</td>
<td>interrogative pronoun: &quot;how much?&quot; &quot;how many?&quot; &quot;how great?&quot; (488b)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ογωντ</td>
<td>single, in πι- ... ογωντ &quot;the very same...&quot;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ογητε</td>
<td>(conj.) neither, nor</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ογητε-</td>
<td>(prep.) between (494b); presuffixal ογητω-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ω</td>
<td>interjection: O! (esp. in address)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ω-, εω-</td>
<td>to be able to (with infinitive)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ωι</td>
<td>affirmative aorist base</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ων-</td>
<td>(prep.) (up) to, toward, until (541b); presuffixal ωπο-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-ώναν</td>
<td>part of conditional base (ε ... ωναν-)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ωαντ-</td>
<td>&quot;until...&quot; base, presuffixal</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ωαντε-</td>
<td>&quot;until...&quot; base, before nominal, 2nd sgl. fem., indef., interrog. and demonstrative pronoun actor</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ωαπε-</td>
<td>affirmative aorist base, before nominal, 2nd sgl. fem., interr. &amp; indef. pronominal actors</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-οφην(π)-</td>
<td>in -ροφην(π)-: see π-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ωυε</td>
<td>&quot;It is right, befitting&quot;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>χωτε-</td>
<td>(prep.) without</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-ς</td>
<td>3rd sgl. masc. prefix pronoun: &quot;he&quot; (in durative pattern)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-ςς, -ς-</td>
<td>3rd sgl. masc. suffix pronoun: &quot;he&quot;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2α-</td>
<td>(prep.) under for (632a); presuffixal 2απο-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2ι</td>
<td>(prep.) (up)on, from upon; with (643b); presuffixal 2ιωω-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>between zero-determined nouns, coordinating &quot;... and...&quot;</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
...2ωω - reinforce: "... (his) part", "... (he) too": 1st sgl. 2ω, 2ωωπ, 2nd sgl. fem. 2ωωτε, 2nd plur. 2ωτητητη

2λοι - interjection: "Would that ...!"

2ευν - indefinite article, plural: "some ..."

2τη (2τη) (prep.) in, at (683a): presuffixal 2ητη-

2τη (2τη) (prep.) into, against (685a)

2ναι/2νει, ε2ναι/ε2νει - "(He/the man) is willing" (690a)

2οινε, 2οινε - indefinite pronoun: some, several, a few

2ων - (prep.) as

2ωτε - (conj.) so as (to)

2ιτη - (prep.) of (e.g. in "afraid of ...", "wait for ...") (640b)

2ηντη - see ειν

2ητη - (prep.) by (agency of), from (428b); presuffixal 2ητοτη - 2nd plur. 2ιτη-τητητη

2οταν - (conj.) when(ever), as soon as ...

2ουε - in -2ουε - see ο-

... 2ωνυτη - particle: but, on the other hand; at all

2α - quantifying pronoun: many

2ατητη - (prep.) with (717a); presuffixal 2ατητη - 2ατητη-

2ινη - (prep.) upon (758b); presuffixal 2ινω-

αε - (conj.) that, so that, saying that

ακκακ, αεκακ - (conj.) in order to, so that

αινη (αινη) - (prep.) since (772a)

αινα - (with the perfect tense)

αη - (conj.) or

... 6ε - particle: approx. "then", "therefore" (cf. French done, Greek ουν) (802a)

6ε - see Κε

6ιν - (with infinitive) deriving abstract action nouns from verbs
B. LEXICAL GLOSSARY

(1) The words in the lexeme glossary are entered after each letter, in the following order: native words, (2) words of Greek origin, (3) proper names. An independent morpheme glossary follows. The native words in the lexeme glossary are arranged by their consonant skeleton (with subarrangement by vowels), according to Crum's method (Coptic Dictionary, Oxford, 1939; also Westendorf, Koptisches Handwörterbuch, Heidelberg 1965-1977, with some minor changes); all other entries (Greek words, proper names) are arranged in the Western alphabetic order (initial ʔ not counting as a letter; r before r or κ = n). Numbers in parentheses following the English equivalents refer to Crum's dictionary, where the full information concerning the lexical item may be found.

(2) The forms and meanings given are those attested in the Chrestomathy, not "in Coptic"; for a comprehensive presentation of forms and semantic synthesis the student is referred to Crum's or Westendorf's dictionaries.

(3) Gender (masc./fem.) is indicated for a noun only when it is either evident in our Coptic text or unambiguously attested elsewhere; the absence of such indication means (a) either gender or (b) ambiguous evidence.

(4) Prenominal and presuffixal forms of verbs and prepositions are marked in the conventional manner, by - and ~ respectively.

Note the following abbreviations:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>adv.</th>
<th>adverb</th>
<th>part.</th>
<th>particle</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>art.</td>
<td>article</td>
<td>plur.</td>
<td>plural</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>fem.</td>
<td>feminine</td>
<td>poss.</td>
<td>possessive</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>imp.</td>
<td>imperative</td>
<td>prep.</td>
<td>preposition</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>indef.</td>
<td>indefinite</td>
<td>pron.</td>
<td>pronoun</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>interj.</td>
<td>interjection</td>
<td>sgl.</td>
<td>singular</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>interr.</td>
<td>interrogative</td>
<td>top.</td>
<td>toponym (placename)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>masc.</td>
<td>masculine</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Greek</td>
<td>English</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-------</td>
<td>---------</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>α-</td>
<td>about ..., approximately (with quantity or number) (1a)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>αε</td>
<td>see εἰρέ</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>αβω</td>
<td>fisherman's net (fem.) (2a)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>αβωκ</td>
<td>crow; plural αβωκε (2b)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>αλο-</td>
<td>&quot;Cease!&quot;, imper. of λό</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>αλογ</td>
<td>youth (masc.) (5a)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>αμάγτε</td>
<td>to hold, have power over (9a)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(with art.)</td>
<td>power, rule (9a)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>αμογ</td>
<td>&quot;Come/go!&quot;, imper. of εἰ</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>αναι</td>
<td>to be pleasing (11a)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(p-αναι)</td>
<td>be pleasing; imp. απι-αναι</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(with art.)</td>
<td>beauty (11a)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>αναγ</td>
<td>&quot;See!&quot;, imper. of ναγ</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>αναφ</td>
<td>oath (masc.) (12b)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(p-αναφ)</td>
<td>take an oath</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>απα</td>
<td>Father (title) (13a)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>απε</td>
<td>head (fem.) (13b)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>απι-</td>
<td>&quot;Do/make!&quot;, imper. of εἰρέ</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>απικε</td>
<td>blame (15a)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>άπικε</td>
<td>to blame</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>αρογγε</td>
<td>thistle, thorn (16a)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>αριν</td>
<td>great size or quantity (fem.) (2a) (αραι, to increase, be great)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>αρογ</td>
<td>price, value (fem.)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>αραν</td>
<td>colour (masc.) (20b)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>αραμομ</td>
<td>to sigh (ωφ) (24b)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>αραι</td>
<td>to be, become numerous, multiply (22b); static</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(p-αραι)</td>
<td>&quot;(is) numerous, plentiful&quot;</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(with art.)</td>
<td>large amount or number</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>αρη</td>
<td>multitude, great number (fem.) (22b)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>αρ</td>
<td>meat (masc.) (23a)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>αρ</td>
<td>fly (masc.) (23b)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>aρενεβιω</td>
<td>honeybee</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>αρε</td>
<td>lifetime, life limit (masc.) (24a)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>αρε(πατ-)</td>
<td>see ωρε</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>αρο</td>
<td>treasure (masc.) (24b)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>αρωμ</td>
<td>eagle (masc.) (25b)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>αρεπατ-</td>
<td>to stand (up) (ωρε)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>αρηγ</td>
<td>see κωκ αρηγ</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
GLOSSARY

ἀθρόον childless, sterile person (26b)
ἀψισ “Say (it)!”. imp. of χω
ἀέρ air, sky (masc.)
ἀργαθόν (the) good, goods (property) (masc.)
ἀργοθοκ/ον good
ἀγάπη love, charity (fem.)
ἀγιοτάτος most holy
ἀγων combat (masc.)
ἀγρίος/ον wild
ἀίρετος heresy (fem.)
ἀιρετικος heretic
ἀισθάνει to feel, perceive
ἀιθήμα request (masc.)
ἀιχμαλωτός captive, prisoner
ἀἰων age, era (masc.)
ἀκαθαρσία impurity (fem.)
ἀκαθαρτικος impure
ἀκροβύστις foreskin (fem.)
ἀληθώς truly (adv.)
ἀλλοτριος alien, foreign
ἀμέλει to be indifferent, careless, neglectful
ἀναγνωστής reader
ἀγέλος angel (masc.)
ἀναγκάζε to force
ἀναγκαίος/ον necessary, important
ἀνάγκη distress, necessity (fem.)
ἀναχωρεῖ to leave, go off
ἀνεξε to bear, suffer with patience
ἀνομία lawlessness (fem.)
ἀνομος/ον lawless
ἀνοξία forbearance (fem.)
ἀντι (prep.) against, instead of
ἀνοίγο to demand, expect, require
ἀπαθρέποις inhuman
ἀπαντά to encounter
ἀπάτη to err, mislead
ἀπάθη error (fem.)
ἀπειπαν promise, threat (fem.)
ἀπιστος unbelieving, infidel
Glossary

ἀναλώς (adv.) simply
ἀποδείξεις argument, proof (fem.)
ἀποθήκη storehouse, barn (fem.)
ἀπολογία excuse, explanation (fem.)
ἀποστόλος apostle (masc.)
ἀποταγεῖ to renounce, give up
ἀργός idle, slothful
ἀρετή virtue (fem.)
ἀριστον breakfast (masc.)
ἀρνά to deny
ἀρχαίος/οίς archangel
ἀρχαῖος/οίς of old
ἀρχή office, authority (fem.)
ἀρχή beginning, origin (fem.)
ἀρχεῖ to rule
ἀρχεῖ to begin (ἀρ- to)
ἀρχιεπίσκοπος archbishop (masc.)
ἀρχιερεύς archpriest (masc.)
ἀρχίον magistrate, office-holder, archon (masc.)
ἀκεφίας impious person
ἀκναζε to greet, salute
ἀγγέλιος prefect, Augustalis (masc.)
ἀγιάνε to grow, increase
ἀφόρμη incitement (fem.)

Proper Names:

Αβέλ Abel
Αβραάμ Abraham
Αδάμ Adam
Ἀζαρίας Azarias
Ανάνιας Ananias
Ανδρέας Andrew
Ἀθανασίος Athanasius
Ἀλέξανδρος Alexander
Αμήν Amenti, the Underworld, Hades (masc. top.)
Ἀννά Ann
Απα Father (title)
Ἀπόλλων Apollo
GLOSSARY

b (BETA)

b\(\omega\)  tree (fem.) (28a)
b\(\nu\)b\(\nu\)  den. cave (masc.) (28b)
b\(\alpha\)\(\alpha\)\(\delta\)\(\varepsilon\)  to be insipid (28b)
b\(\omega\)\(\kappa\)  to go (29a)
b\(\epsilon\)\(\kappa\e)  wages (masc.) (30b)
b\(\alpha\)\(\alpha\)  eye (masc.) (31b)
b\(\sigma\)\(\alpha\)  outer part (masc.) (33b)
e\(\beta\)\(\omega\)\(\alpha\) (adv.) out; z\(\beta\)\(\omega\)\(\alpha\) (adv.) outside
p\(\alpha\)-\(\beta\)\(\omega\)\(\alpha\) to escape
k\(\alpha\)-\(\beta\)\(\omega\)\(\alpha\) to vomit
n\(\beta\)\(\alpha\)\(\lambda\)\(\alpha\)  beside (prep.)
b\(\alpha\)\(\alpha\)-\(\gamma\)\(\tau\) simple, frank (715a)
b\(\omega\)\(\lambda\)  to loosen; to interpret (32b)
(with art.) interpretation
b\(\alpha\)\(\varepsilon\)\(\beta\)\(i\)\(a\)\(e\)  grain (fem.) (37b)
b\(\alpha\)\(\kappa\)\(l\)\(e\)  blind person (38a)
b\(\alpha\)\(\lambda\)\(\lambda\) (fem.)
b\(\alpha\)\(\alpha\)\(\alpha\)\(m\)\(i\)\(e\)  goat (39a)
b\(\omega\)\(o\)\(n\)\(e\)  evil (39b)
p\(\alpha\)-\(\beta\)\(o\)\(n\)\(e\) to be evil, damaging
b\(\gamma\)\(\i\)\(t\)  see q\(\gamma\)\(t\)
b\(\gamma\)\(p\)\(p\)\(e\)  new, young (43a)
b\(\alpha\)\(p\)\(r\)\(w\)\(t\)  brass (43b)
b\(\sigma\)\(\tau\)\(e\)  abomination (fem.) (45b)
b\(\alpha\)\(\gamma\)\(w\)\(o\)\(p\)  fox (fem.) (47b)
b\(\omega\)\(\z\) to bend (47b); prenominal b\(\epsilon\)z-

b\(\alpha\)\(p\)\(t\)\(i\)\(c\)\(h\)\(a\)  baptism (masc.)
b\(\alpha\)\(p\)\(b\)\(a\)\(p\)\(p\)\(o\)\(c\)  barbarian
b\(\alpha\)\(c\)\(a\)\(n\)\(i\)\(z\)  to torture
b\(\alpha\)\(c\)\(a\)\(n\)\(o\)\(c\)  torture (masc.)
b\(\eta\)\(m\)\(a\)  judgement-seat (masc.)
b\(\i\)\(o\)\(c\)  life, way of life (masc.)
b\(\alpha\)\(p\)\(t\)\(t\)\(e\)\(i\)  to harm, damage
b\(\omega\)\(h\)\(e\)\(i\)  to aid
b\(\omega\)\(h\)\(e\)\(g\)\(i\)\(a\)  aid (fem.)
PROPER NAMES:

βαβυλων Babylon (top.)
βακανος Bacanos
βαραχιας Barachias
βελζεβουα Belzebub
βηλαμων Belamon, Baal-Hamon (top.)

γ (GAMMA) (no Egyptian lexemes)

γαμος wedlock (masc.)
γενεα generation (fem.)
γενοιτο "May it come about", "let it be!"
μη γενοιτο "God forbid!"
γενος kind (masc.)
γιγας giant
γραμματευς scribe
νε-τε-γραφ the Scripture(s) (fem./plur.)
γυμναζε to examine, dispute

PROPER NAMES:

τ-γαλατια the Galilee (top.)
τ-γεχενα Hell, Gehenna (fem. top.)
γεζι Gehazi
γομορρα Gomorrha (top.)

Δ (DELTΑ) (no Egyptian lexemes)

Δαιμονιον demon, evil spirit (masc.)
Δαιμων demon (masc.)
Δειπνον, Δοινον dinner (masc.)
Π-Διαβολος the Devil
Διδασκη testament (fem.)
Διδακονει to serve, minister
Δικαιον the right, just (masc.)
Δικαιος righteous
Δικαιοσυνη righteousness (fem.)
Δικαιωμα act of justice, righteousness; ordinance (masc.)
Δικαστηριον court of justice (masc.)
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Greek</th>
<th>English</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ΔΙΚΑΣΤΗΣ</td>
<td>judge (masc.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ΔΙΩΨΜΟΣ</td>
<td>persecution (masc.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ΔΟΚΙΜΑΖΕ</td>
<td>to put to the test</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ΔΡΑΚΩΝ</td>
<td>python, serpent (masc.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ΔΡΑΠΕΤΗΣ</td>
<td>runaway slave (masc.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ΔΩΡΕΑ</td>
<td>gift (fem.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ΔΩΡΟΝ</td>
<td>gift (masc.)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

ε (EPSILON)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Greek</th>
<th>English</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ἐβιθήν</td>
<td>poor, wretched person (53a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐβοτ</td>
<td>month (masc.) (53b); plur. ἐβοτέ</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐβύγ-</td>
<td>see ὑγ</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐκίβε, κίβε</td>
<td>breast (fem.) (54a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐλκώ</td>
<td>sycomore fruit (54b)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἔνηψε</td>
<td>inundation (fem.) (56a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐνιατέ</td>
<td>(adv.) greatly, much (190a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐναγ</td>
<td>thither (197a); see ἰμαγ</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐνθῆδ, ἰνθῆδ</td>
<td>plant (masc.) (233a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐνεξ</td>
<td>eternity (57a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἔνεενς</td>
<td>eternally, forever</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐρ-</td>
<td>= ἐρ-; see ἐιρε</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐριθ</td>
<td>to pledge, vow (58a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐρήγυ</td>
<td>(in possessed plur. ἐνερηγύ) fellow companions, (we) and others, each other, mutually (59a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐχήτ</td>
<td>ground, bottom (masc.) (60a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐκεύωγ</td>
<td>(adv.) ἐπεκτ, ἔπεκτ down(wards)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐκτήω</td>
<td>sheep (masc.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐκεῦ</td>
<td>weight, burden (fem.) (352b)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐκοῦ</td>
<td>glory, honour (masc.) (62a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐκοῦ</td>
<td>to be glorified</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐῳ-</td>
<td>see ὑ-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐς</td>
<td>ox, cow, cattle (64a); plur. ἐκοῦ</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐς</td>
<td>(adv.) in(to), towards (686a); see ἐς</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐς</td>
<td>(adv.) up/down (698b, 700a); see ἐς</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

ἐρκακεῖν | to lose heart |
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ἐσονός</td>
<td>people; (plur.) gentiles</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
GLOSSARY

εἰδος
sort, kind, class (masc.)

ἐκκλησία
church (fem.)

εὐαλλον, εὐαλλον
least

ἐλληνικόν
Hellenic, pagan, non-Christian

ἐλπίζε
hope

ἐλπίς
hope (fem.)

ἐκπάτευε
to abstain, be continent

ἐκπάθης
continent

ἐν γωνίαν, εἰς γωνίαν
(adv., conj.) as long as

ἐντολή
commandment (fem.)

ἐξοσεία
authority (fem.)

ἐπιστολή
to authorize

ἐπιστολή
to praise, commend

ἐπίστολος
authority (fem.)

ἐπιθυμεῖ
to desire

ἐπιθυμία
desire (fem.)

ἐπικαλεῖ
to call upon, turn to

ἐπίσκοπος
bishop (masc.)

ἐπιστήμη
understanding, skill (fem.)

ἐργασία
work, function, activity (fem.)

ἐυαγγελίων
Gospel (masc.)

ἐγκεφαλικοσ
pious person

ἐγκαθαλέλον
to gladden, delight

ἐγκαθαίρεσθι
joy (fem.)

PROPER NAMES:

ἐνώχ
Enoch

ἐπηθη
Epep, name of eleventh month

ἐγερ
Eve

ζ (ΖΕΤΑ) (no Egyptian lexemes)

ζωμίν
soup, broth

ζων
animal (masc.)

PROPER NAMES:

ζαχαρίας
Zacharias
GLOSSARY

Η (ETA)

| Η | house (masc.) (66a) |
| ΗΠ | stative of οὐπ |
| ΗΠΕ | number (fem.) (527b) |
| ΗΡΠ | wine (masc.) (66b) |

2ΗΓΕΜΩΝ | governor, hegemon (masc.) |
2ΗΛΑ | (adv.) already |
2ΗΔΟΝΗ | sensual pleasure (fem.) |
2ΗΛΙΚΙΑ | age, adult state (fem.) |

PROPER NAMES:

ΗΣΑΥ | Esau |
ΗΦΑΙΣΤΟΣ | Hephaestus |

Θ (THETA)

| ΘΕ | in θε, καταθε see γε |
| ΘΕΒ | leaven, moisture (457a) |
| ΘΕΒΙΟΝ | to humiliate (457b); stative θεβίον "(is) humble, lowly" |
| (with art.) humbleness, humility |

| ΘΑΛΑΣΣΑ | the Sea |
| ΘΕΟΦΙΛΕΣΤΑΤΟΣ | most God-loving |
| ΘΕΩΡΙΑ | observation (fem.) |
| ΘΗΡΙΟΝ | wild beast (masc.) |
| ΘΛΙΒΕ | to oppress, trouble |
| ΘΛΙΨΙΣ | tribulation (fem.) |
| ΘΡΟΝΟΣ | throne (masc.) |
| ΘΥΣΙΑΣΤΗΡΙΟΝ | altar (masc.) |

PROPER NAMES:

ΘΙΛΙΜ | (i.e. Τ-ΘΙΡΟΥΣΙΑΛΗΜ) Jerusalem (top.) |
ΘΗΒΑΙΚ | the Thebaid (top.) |
C1. i (IOTA)

ci

to come, go (70a); stative נָה "(is) going, coming"; imperative אָמֵ֥י
ciā
valley (masc.) (73a)
ciā
εἰατ- (possessed) eye (73)
tσαβ-εἰατ- to enlighten, instruct
ciō

to wash (75a)
ciō
ass (75b)
ciōβε
to thirst (76a); stative οβε "(is) thirsty"
ciōνε
to know (77b)
ciōνε
to bring (78b); prenominal ṃ-, presuffixal ττ-
ciōνε
to resemble (80b)
(with art.) likeness, resemblance, aspect
ciōπε
work, task, craft, occupation (fem.) (81a)
ciōπε
to do, make (83b); prenominal π-, presuffixal ττ-,
(phrase) stative α "(is) made"
(phrase) auxiliary, deriving verbs from nouns; α ṃ-
"(is) in state/circumstance of", "be as"
ciōτ
father (masc.) (86b); plur. εἰοτε
ciōτ
barley (masc.) (87a)
ciōτε

dew (fem.)
(e)ίογααι
Jew
(e)ίωλον
idol (masc.)
(ε)ίπρην, ιπρη
picture, icon (fem.)
eἰμὴ
(adv.) unless
(e)ιπρινκος
peace (fem.)
eἰπρινκος
peaceful

PROPER NAMES:

iaκωβ
Jacob
iaφετ
Japheth
ia = ιιωκάτ
Jesus
iaκακ
Isaac
iaκας
Jesuiax
iaμακ
Ishmael
iaγακ
Judas
iaβ
Job
iaωλονκ
John
iaωσχφ
Joseph
GLOSSARY

κ (ΚΑΡΡΑ)

κε- (an)other: plur. κοογε
κουι small, little (92b)
κω to lay, set down (εγραφαί); let, allow (94b); prenominal κα-, presuffixal κα-, stative κ "(is) put, set"
κιβε see εκιβε
κβα revenge (masc.) (99b)
χι-κβα to take revenge
κβο to chill, refresh (100a); prenominal κβε-
(with art.) coolness, chill
κακ in ωγκακ: see ωκακ
κακε darkness (masc.)
κωκ αγνυ to strip (101a); stative κικ αγγυ (is) stripped, nude
κλωολε cloud (104a)
κλομ crown (masc.) (104b)
καϕ to blow (105b)
†-καϕ to strike
κωλα to knock (106b)
κωλακ to bend (107b); prenominal κελακ- κακ-
κιμ to move, shake (108a)
κιομ to be, become black (109b)
κωμω to sneer, mock (with καλ-) (110a)
κινε to be fat, juicy (111b); stative κινω "(is) fat, juicy"
κωνε to pierce, slay (112a)
κνος to be, become putrid; to stink (112b)
καπ string, thread (masc.) (113a)
καμυρ to grumble, complain (116a)
καμυρ to be dark (116b)
κροη guile (masc.) (118b)
κας bone (masc.) (120a); plur. κεες
κωτ to build (122a); prenominal κετ-, presuffixal κοτ-, stative κνυ "(is) built"
κωτε to turn, return (often reflexive); to encircle (ε-) (124a); prenominal κετ-, presuffixal κοτ-
κοτε crookedness, guile (127a), in μιντ-σανκοτε
κτο to turn, return; cause to turn, return (127b); stative κνυ "(is) turned"
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Greek Word</th>
<th>English Translation</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ΚΙΩΟΓ</td>
<td>see ΚΗΕ</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ΚΟΟΓΕ</td>
<td>see ΚΕ</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ΚΑΖ</td>
<td>land, earth, country (masc.) (131a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ΚΩΖ</td>
<td>point (masc.) (132a); plur. ΚΟΩΖ</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ΚΩΖ</td>
<td>to be envious, begrudge (132b); stative ΚΗΖ &quot;(is) envious&quot; (with art.) envy, rivalry</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ΚΟΕΙΖ</td>
<td>sheath (masc.) (132b)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ΚΩΖΤ</td>
<td>fire (masc.) (133b)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Greek Words in Greek:**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Greek Word</th>
<th>English Translation</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ΚΑΘΗΚΗΣΙΣ, ΚΑΘΗΚΗΣΙΣ</td>
<td>exposition, explanation (fem.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ΚΑΘΗΚΕΙ</td>
<td>to join, be fitting, belong</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Τ-ΚΑΘΟΛΙΚΗ ΕΚΚΛΗΣΙΑ</td>
<td>the Catholic Church</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Τ-ΚΑΙΝΗ ΔΙΑΘΗΚΗ</td>
<td>the New Testament</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ΚΑΙΡΟΣ</td>
<td>season, occasion, opportunity (masc.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ΚΑΚΙΑ</td>
<td>badness, vice (fem.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ΚΑΛΑΣ</td>
<td>(adv.) well</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ΚΑΝΩΝ</td>
<td>rule, canon (masc.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ΚΑΡΠΟΣ</td>
<td>fruit (masc.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ΚΑΤΑΛΛΑΛΕΙ</td>
<td>to calumniate</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ΚΑΤΑΦΡΟΝΕΙ</td>
<td>to disdain</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ΚΗΠΟΣ</td>
<td>garden (masc.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ΚΕΛΕΥΕ</td>
<td>to command, enjoin</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ΚΕΡΑΥΝΟΣ</td>
<td>thunder (masc.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ΚΗΡΙΑΚΗ, ΚΥΡΙΑΚΗ</td>
<td>Sunday (fem.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ΚΕΦΑΛΑΙΟΣ/ΟΝ</td>
<td>(the) main, most important; capital</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ΚΙΝΔΥΝΕΥΕ</td>
<td>to be in danger</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ΚΙΘΑΡΩΔΟΣ</td>
<td>lyre-player, harper</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ΚΛΑΤΟΣ, ΚΛΑΔΟΣ</td>
<td>branch (masc.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ΚΛΗΠΟΝΟΜΕΙ</td>
<td>to inherit</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ΚΟΙΝΩΝΕΙ</td>
<td>to commune</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ΚΟΙΝΩΝΙΑ</td>
<td>community (fem.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ΚΟLambda</td>
<td>to punish, chastise</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ΚΟΛΑΣΙΣ</td>
<td>punishment, chastisement (fem.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ΚΟΜΕΣ</td>
<td>comes, office-holder</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ΚΟΜΕΤΕ</td>
<td>to adorn</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ΚΟΜΗΜΗΣΙΣ</td>
<td>adornment (fem.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ΚΟΜΗΚΟΣ/ΟΝ</td>
<td>worldly</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ΚΟΜΗΚΟΣ</td>
<td>world, universe (masc.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ΚΡΙΜΑ</td>
<td>judgement, sentence (masc.)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
GLOSSARY

ΚΡΙΝΕ to judge
ΚΡΙΝΗ judge (masc.)
ΚΤΙΣΙΣ, ΚΤΗΣΙΣ creation (fem.)

PROPER NAMES:

ΚΑΕΙΝ Cain
ΚΑΙΣΑΡΙΟΣ Caesarius
ΚΑΡΧΑΡΙΣ Carcharis (top.)
ΚΗΝΗ Egypt (masc. top.)
ΡΙΝΚΗ Egyptian
Τ-ΚΗΡΙΑΚΗ Sunday
ΚΡΟΝΟΣ Kronos
ΚΥΡΙΑΛΟΣ Cyril

Λ (LAMBDΑ)

ΛΩ to cease (ξα-) (135a); imp. λάω -
ΛΙΒΕ to be, become mad (136b); stative λοβέ "(is) mad"
ΛΑΚΙ piece (139a)
ΛΩΒΗEpoch to wither; to be filthy (142b)
ΛΑΣ tongue (masc.) (144b)
ΛΑΣΙΕ any(thing), some(thing) (146a)
ΛΩΞΩ to crush; to be crushed (151a)
ΛΑΩΒ, ΛΩΒ impudent person (151a)
ΛΟΙΒΕ excuse (fem.) (151b)

ΛΑΜΠΑΣ lamp, light
ΛΑΟΣ people (masc.)
ΛΗΣΤΗΣ robber
ΛΥΠΕΙ to feel pain, sorrow; to cause pain
ΛΥΠΗ pain, sorrow (fem.)
ΛΟΓΟΣ speech, word, account (masc.)
†-ΛΟΓΟΣ (ξα-) to account for
ΛΟΙΜΟΣ pestilence

PROPER NAMES:

ΛΑΖΑΡΟΣ Lazarus
ΛΑΜΕΧ Lamech
ΛΟΥΚΑΣ Luke
ΛΩΤ Lot
m (MI)

mā- place (masc.) (153a)

me imp. of ḫ to give; imp. prefix with causatives ("mattāmō")

me truth (fem.) (156b)

me to love (156a); prenominal mēpē-, presuffixal mēpī-

mēpī- "-loving", agent noun with object; mēpī- beloved person, plur. mēpate

mōy to die (159a)

mōyī see me "to love"

mōyī lion (160b)

mōkme to reflect, deliberate (162a); presuffixal mēk-

mōyā (with art.) reflection

mōkē neck (masc.) (162b)

mēkē to be in pain, grieve, feel pain (163a); static mēkē "(is) in pain, (is) grieved"

mōkē (with art.) mēkē mēkē "grief"

mōyā- suffering, pain (fem.) (164a)

mōyā- to salt (165a); presuffixal mōyā-

mēmē-, mē- "there does not exist", statement of non-existence

(mē)mē- "(He) has not", negative possession verboid; prenominal (mē)mēte-

mēmon "no" (168a)

mēmēte (adv.) only, alone (190a)

mēmy there (196b)

mēne in mēnen: daily (172a)

mēne quality, type, sort (172a)

mōone to pasture, feed (173a)

mōone (with art.) pasture, feeding

mōone to bring into port (173b)

mēnē (prep.) after, following (in time) (314b) pres-

x suffixed mēnē-

mēnē- witness (177a)

mēnēmē- testimony

mēnu to be worthy (179a)

(with art.) worth
**MOUYP**  to bind, tie (180a); presuffixal **MOP-**

**MERIT; plur. MERATE**  see me “to love”

**Hep**  harbour, landing stage (fem.) (183a)

**HACE**  calf (186a) (masc.)

**HICE**  to give birth (184a)

(with art.) birth

**MNICE**  interest on loan (fem.) (186a)

† EMMICE to take interest, lend on interest

**MOCTE**  to hate (187a); prenominal **MECTE-**, presuffixal **MECTOW-**

**MACT-** “-hating”, agent noun with object

(with art.) hatred

**MNHT**  ten (187b)

**HATE**  to obtain (189a)

**MATOI, MATOEI**  soldier (masc.) (190b)

**MATOY**  poison (fem.) (196a)

**MHTE**  middle (fem.) (190b)

**MOYTE**  to call, name (191b)

(with possessive art.) (someone’s) presence (193a)

**MTO EVOI**  to rest (also reflexive): to be comfortable, well

(193b) stative **MOTN** “is rested, comfortable”;

“is easy (to do)”

(with art.) rest, repose, well-being, comfort

**MAAY**  mother (fem.) (197a)

**MOOY**  water (masc.) (197b)

**MEEYE**  to think, have in mind (201a)

(with art.) thought

† π- **MEEYE** (H-), π- **PEMEEYE** have in mind, recall

**MOYOYT**  to kill (201a); prenominal **MEYT-**, presuffixal

**MOOYT-**, stative **MOOYT** “(is) dead”

**MAWE**  scales, balance (fem.) (201a)

**MEWAK**  maybe, perhaps, “you do not know” (201b)

**MEWE**  to fight, do battle (202b)

(with art.) battle

**MNHWE**  crowd, multitude (masc.)

**MOOYWE**  to walk, go (203b)

**MOOYWT**  to search out, examine (206b); prenominal

**MEWT-**, presuffixal **MOWT-**

**MEWWE**  “it is not befitting” (negation of **WEWE**) (608a)
MOY2 to fill (208a); prenominal MEZ-, presuffixal
MAZ-, stative MEZ "(is) full"
MOY2 to look (201b)
MOIZE, MOIZE marvel, wonder (fem.) (211b)
MAaxe ear (masc.) 212b

HARIA magic (fem.)
MABITHC disciple
MABAPIZE to consider happy, blessed
MABAPIOM happy, blessed
MALAKOC effeminate
MALAOH, MALAWN (adv.) "not to mention", especially, rather
MAMMONAC π-MAMMONAC Mammon
MANIXAIOC Manichee
MARTYROC martyr
MARTIGOY to whip
MELETA to meditate, practise
MELETH meditation, religious practice (fem.)
MELOC member, limb of body (masc.)
MERIC allotted share (fem.)
MEROC part (masc.)
METANOEI, METANOI to repent
METECX to share, take part
MORIC (adv.) hardly
MONAIOC monk
MORGHIC only-begotten
MONON (adv.) only, but
MORPH form (fem.)
MYSTHPIOY pMYSTHPIOY ETOYAN the Holy Sacrament

PROPER NAMES:

MATHBAIOC Matthew
P-MAMMONAC Mammon
MANIC Mani
MARIA Mark
MARKOC Mary
T-MESOPOTAMIA Mesopotamia (top.)
MIZAH Michael
MWYCHIC Moses
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>N</th>
<th>(NI)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>N-</strong></td>
<td>see eîne &quot;to bring&quot;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Nà</strong></td>
<td>to pity, have mercy (216b)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>ð-&lt;i&gt;Nà&lt;/i&gt; to do charity</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>&lt;i&gt;Mêthna&lt;/i&gt; act of charity, mercy</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Nò</strong></td>
<td>stative of &lt;i&gt;we&lt;/i&gt; and &lt;i&gt;nòy&lt;/i&gt; &quot;to be about to&quot;, &quot;to go&quot;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Nòy</strong></td>
<td>to be about to ... (219a); stative &lt;i&gt;nà&lt;/i&gt; &quot;(is) about to ...&quot;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Nòyì</strong></td>
<td>gold (masc.) (221b)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Nòbë</strong></td>
<td>sin (imasc.) (222a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Nònt</strong></td>
<td>merciful person</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Nòiat-</strong></td>
<td>&quot;is blessed&quot; (74b); see &lt;i&gt;eïà, eiiat-&lt;/i&gt;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Nòeìk</strong></td>
<td>adulterous person (222b)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>ð-&lt;i&gt;Nòeìk&lt;/i&gt; to commit adultery, fornicate</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Nòkà</strong></td>
<td>thing (223a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Nòkòtòk</strong></td>
<td>to lie down, sleep (224a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>&lt;i&gt;òkà&lt;/i&gt; &lt;i&gt;Nòkòtòk&lt;/i&gt; bed</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Nòme</strong></td>
<td>(adv.) truly (157a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Nòynë</strong></td>
<td>root (fem.) (227b)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Nòyòte</strong></td>
<td>god (230b)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>ñ-nòyòte God</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>see eîne &quot;to bring&quot;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Này</strong></td>
<td>to see (233b); &lt;i&gt;này&lt;/i&gt; &lt;i&gt;ebo&lt;/i&gt; to be able to see, have eyesight</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>(with art.) sight, view</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Này</strong></td>
<td>time, hour (masc.) (243b)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Nñyì</strong></td>
<td>stative of &lt;i&gt;eî&lt;/i&gt; &quot;to come&quot;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Nòyòt</strong></td>
<td>to be hard, severe (237a); stative &lt;i&gt;nàwòt-&lt;/i&gt; &quot;(is) harsh, severe&quot;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>(with art.) hardness, severity</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>&lt;i&gt;nàwòt-&lt;/i&gt; &quot;hard of...&quot; in compounds: &lt;i&gt;nàwòt&lt;/i&gt; &lt;i&gt;òtì&lt;/i&gt; obdurate</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Nïqë</strong></td>
<td>to blow, breathe (238b); presuffixal &lt;i&gt;nàq-t-&lt;/i&gt;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>**Nòqë&lt;/i&gt;</td>
<td>advantage, benefit (fem.) (239b)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>ð-&lt;i&gt;Nòqë&lt;/i&gt; to be of advantage, beneficial</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Nèg</strong></td>
<td>oil (masc.) (240b)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Nòygë</strong></td>
<td>rope (masc.) (241a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Nàgë</strong></td>
<td>shoulders, upper back, neck (fem.) (243a)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
NAZTE  to trust, entrust, believe (264a); stative ENZOT
"(is) trustworthy"
NOYX  false, lying (246b)
NAAXE  see NAXZE
NOYXE  to throw (E80LA out) (247a); prenominal NEX-,
presuffixal NOYX-, stative NHX (E-) "(is) thrown
upon, relying on"
NAXZE, NAAXE  tooth (fem.) (249b)
NOB  big, great (250a)
NOBNE6  to mock, reproach (252b)
(with art.) reproach
NOY6E  to be angry, annoyed with (252b)
†-NOY6E to give cause for anger

NHOC  island (fem.)
NHCTEA  fast (fem.)
NHCTEYE  to fast
NOEI, NOI  to grasp, understand
NOMOC  law; N-NOMOC the Law
NMYFIOC  groomsmen (masc.)
NZOCON, ENZOCON  (adv., conj.) as long as

PROPER NAMES:
NABOYXODONOCOR  Nebuchadnezzar
NAZARETH  Nazareth (top.)
NWZE  Noah

A (XI)

O (OU)
O  stative of EIRE to do
OBE  see EBEB
O8E  tooth (fem.) (254a)
O8IK  bread (masc.) (254a)
OME  clay (masc.) (254b)
ONZE  stative of OM2 to live
OCE  damage, loss, fine (masc.) (256b)
†-OCE to suffer damage, be fined
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Term</th>
<th>Translation</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>οἰων</td>
<td>cry. proclamation (257b), in ταῦτα-οἰων to cry, proclaim</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>οὐ</td>
<td>see ἄμαλ</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>οὐος</td>
<td>moon (masc.) (257b)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>οὐς</td>
<td>sheepfold (masc.) (258a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ζωολοκ</td>
<td>obol (currency of small denomination) (masc.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>οίκολογη</td>
<td>construction, building (fem.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>τ-οικογημένη</td>
<td>the inhabited world (fem.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ζωολως</td>
<td>(adv.) at all</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ζωομηλει, ζωομελει</td>
<td>to preach, communicate</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ζωολογει</td>
<td>to confess</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ζωομως</td>
<td>(adv.) nevertheless</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ζωοοοςιοςιος/οςιον</td>
<td>of the same essence, substance</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ονομαζε</td>
<td>to call by name, mention</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>οντως</td>
<td>(adv.) in fact, in reality, truly</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>οργη</td>
<td>rage, fury (fem.)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

π (PI)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Term</th>
<th>Translation</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>νε</td>
<td>sky, heaven (fem.) (259a); plur. νυχე</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>πνυχε</td>
<td>the upper part; νυχανε up (adv.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>νωνιε</td>
<td>to overturn, change (263b); stative νουνε “(is) overturned”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>πρω</td>
<td>winter (fem.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>πιρε, πειρε</td>
<td>to come out (of sun), shine (266b)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>πωορε</td>
<td>to dream (268a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>περε-παγογ</td>
<td>to foretell the future by dreams</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>πωρκ, πωρεκ</td>
<td>to pluck, root out (268b)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>πωρφ</td>
<td>to spread (with ἐβολα) (269a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>πρνυ</td>
<td>mat, spread (271a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>πωφκ</td>
<td>to separate; to be separated (with ἐβολα) (271b); stative πορφκ “(is) distinct from (e-)” (with art.) separation</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>πιτ</td>
<td>foot, leg, knee (fem.) (273b)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>πωτ</td>
<td>to run (274a); with νισκα- to pursue; stative πντ “(is) running”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ποογ</td>
<td>today (731); see 2οογ</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>παω</td>
<td>trap, snare (masc.) (277a)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
GLOSSARY

πωγ to divide, split (277a)
πωγε to be stupefied, amazed (279b)
(with art.) amazement
πωσ to tear, break (280a); pronominal πές-, presuf-
fixal πας-
παξία drug, medicament, cure (fem.) (282b)
†-παξία to threat medically, curc
και-παξία be treated medically, be cured
πωστο to bend, throw down (also reflexive); (with
εσολ) to pour, shed (283a); presufixal πας-το-
back, hind part (284b)
παξογ behind
ποδε piece (fem.) (286a)
παδε κε spittle (fem.) (286b)
νεξ-παδε to spit

παθός passion (masc.)
παθέ ε to chastize, educate
τ-παλαία (Διαθήκη) the Old Testament
παλιν (adv.) again (usually with on)
π-παντωκράτωρ the Almighty
πανως (adv.) certainly, by all means
παράβα to transgress
παράγε to pass
παρατεί, παρατι to entreat, beg
παρακαλεί to invoke, call upon
π-παρακάντος the Intercessor, Paraclete
παράνομος lawbreaker, wrongdoer
παραπτωμα false step, transgression
παραγυς perversion (fem.)
παραθένος virgin
παριστά to stand by, assist
παρθενία freedom, openness of speech
πατάεε to strike, smite
πειεκ to persuade; to be persuaded, comply
πειρασμος, πιρασμος trial, temptation (masc.)
πειραζε, πιραζε to test, try
πελάγος high sea (masc.)
πετρα rock (fem.)
πεκκ see ἄρκτος
πηγή fountain, spring (fem.)
GLOSSARY

πιστεύε to believe, have faith
πίστις faith (fem.)
πιστός faithful
πλάσσω to lead astray
πλάνη error, going astray (fem.)
πλασσε to shape, form
τε-πλατωνική διασκέδασσα the Platonic Teaching
πλάνο to strike, wound
πλάνη blow, wound (fem.)
πνεῦμα see πνεύμα
πνεύμα, πνεῦμα spirit (masc.)
πνεύματικός/ος spiritual
πνήμα breath (fem.)
πολέμος war, quarrel (masc.)
πολέμικός/ος to fight
πόλις city, town (fem.)
πονηρία wickedness (fem.)
πονηρός/α wicked
pορνεύω to fornicate
πορνή prostitute (fem.)
πορνευόμαι prostitute (masc.)
ποσωστόν (adv.) how much more
πράξις affair, work (masc.)
πράξικ δeed, act (fem.)
πρεσβυτηρικός elder
πρεσβυτερός elder, presbyter
προνοία providence (fem.)
προσέχε to pay attention, mind
προστάτης ordainment (masc.)
προσφήνη offering (fem.)
προφήτης prophet
πύλη gate (fem.)
πύργος tower (masc.)

PROPER NAMES:

τ-πάνος in τοπικός τιμόνος Panopolis (Akhmim) (top.)
π-πάσχα Easter
πασχάλιος Easter Sunday
| παῦλος | Paul      |
| petēbe | Petbe (Egyptian deity) |
| πέτρος | Peter     |
| πσωι | Pshoi     |
| πταχ | Ptah (Egyptian deity) |

**p (RO)**

| πυ | πυ the sun (masc.) (287a) |
| ρο | door, mouth (masc.) (288a); possessed ρω- (mouth) |
| ρω- | to be silent, refrain from talking |
| ρικη | see ρο |
| ρικη | to bend, turn (291a) |
| (with art.) turning, inclination; difference |
| ρωκη | to burn (293a); presuffixal ροκη-, stative ροκη- "(is) burning" |
| (with art.) burning, extreme heat |
| ριμη | to weep (294a) |
| (with art.) weeping |
| ρειη | tear (fem.) (294b); plur. ρειηογε |
| ρωη | man, person; someone, anyone (with zero art.) (294b) |
| ρηνηηο | "man of-" (with noun or placename) |
| ρηνηηο | "-er" (agent noun, with verb) |
| ῥημαο | rich person (296a) |
| ρομη | year (fem.) (296b) |
| τρομη | yearly |
| ρηηε | free person (297a) |
| ραν | name (masc.) (297b); possessed ρην- |
| ρη | swine, pork (masc.) (299a) |
| ρηο | king (299a); plur. ρηωογ |
| (fem.) ρηω | queen |
| μητηρο | kingdom |
| ρηκ | south (masc.) (299b) |
| ροηεικ | to be awake, be vigilant (300b); stative ρηκ "(is) vigilant" |
| ρακογ | dream (fem.) (302b) |
| ρατη | foot (possessed form) (302b) |
GLOSSARY

epaτ- (prep.) to (person, with verbs of motion)
2απaτ- (prep.) under foot of underneath

pωτ to grow, sprout (303b); stative pωτ "(is) in
growth"

pooye stalk of corn (fem.) (306b)
pooyt see oγpɔt
pooyw care (masc.) (306b)
2α- pooyw (2α-) care for

pαw mild, gentle in p̱pαw mild, gentle person
(308a)
pαwe to rejoice (308b)
(with art.) joy

pωwe to suffice; to be authorized, responsible
poγwe evening (310b)

pω2t to strike; to be struck, fall (311a); presuffixal

PROPER NAMES:

pαkote Alexandria (top.)
2pεbβεκα Rebecca

c (SIMMA)

cα side (masc.) (313a)
cα to be beautiful (315a)
(with art.) comeliness, beauty

cε "yes" (316a)
cε sixty (368b)
cι, cει to be sated, have enough (316b)
(with art.) satiety

cο in ↑-cο to spare, refrain (with ε-) (317a)
cο six (368b)
cω to drink (318a); prenominal cε-, presuffixal

(1) (with art.) drink

cw reed mat (318a)
case wise, clever person (319a); plur. caseγ,
caseογ
cash wise, clever woman
GLOSSARY

cwbē to laugh, mock (320b)
(with art.) laughter, mockery
cbw teaching, wisdom (fem.) (319b); plur. cbwōyē
t-cbw to teach
xi-cbw to be taught
cībē to circumcribe (321b)
(with art.) circumcision
atcībē uncircumcised
cbōk to be small (322a); stative cbōk "(is) small"
cōrt wall (masc.) (323a)
cōtēte to prepare (323a); stative cōtēt "(is) prepared"
cwēbē to be, become leprous (324a)
cōwk to draw; to flow (325a); prenominal cēk-,
presuffixal cōk-
cīke to grind, mill (328a)
āwne ļīke millstone
ckāi to plough (328b)
ckīm grey hair (328b)
ckōrgī to roll (329a); stative ckīrgī "(is) rolled,
curled up"
colēcē to comfort, encourage (332a)
cmē voice (fem.) (334b)
cmōy to bless (with e-); stative cmēyāt "(is) blessed"
(with art.) blessing
cmīne to establish, set right (337a); stative cmōnt "(is)
established, set right"
cmōnt stative of cmīne
cmōt form, character (340b)
csēin doctor (masc.) (342b)
cnkōtē see kōtē
con brother (masc.) (342b), male companion; plur.
cmīt brethren
c̣wne sister, female companion (fem., ibid.)
cōone robber (masc.) (344b)
cōunt- price, value (possessed) (369b)
cōnūr to create (345a); prenominal cūn-
(with art.) creation
cūte two (fem.) (346b)
cmāy two (346b)
cmōoyē two, in compound mēntcōoyē twelve (347a)
GLOSSARY

caənuɣ to nourish (347b); prenominal caənuɣ-, caŋy-;
presuffixal caŋy-, stative caŋuɣ “(is) nourished, well-fed”

caŋy blood (masc.) (348a)

cəwŋ to bind, put in fetters (348b); presuffixal conŋ-

cəŋ occasion, time (masc.) (349b)

cəŋcəŋ to entreat (352b); presuffixal cəŋcəŋ-

cəŋtəŋ lips, shore, edge (353a)

cəŋ to spread, scatter (353b)

coŋpe thorn (Fem.) (354a)

cəŋtəŋ stative of cəŋqə

cəŋməŋ to daze, confuse, obscure (356a); presuffixal cəŋməŋ-

cəŋqə to be at leisure (357a); stative cəŋtəŋ, cəŋqə-

“(is) at leisure”

cəŋtəŋ fame, reputation (masc.) (359a)

† coŋtəŋ to be famous

cəŋwəŋ see cəŋt

cəŋ repeat (with e-) (360a)

cəŋ a measure of land (360a) in cəŋwəŋ a small

measure of tilled land (fem.) (89b)

cəŋte to save, redeem (362a); presuffixal coŋt-

cot-

cotbeŋ tool, weapon (363b)

cotbeŋ nəŋəŋ weapon

cəŋ to hear, listen (with c-), obey (with nəŋ-)

(363b); presuffixal cotn-

cot see tcot

cəŋmt obedient

cəŋp to choose, prefer (365a); stative cotn “(is)

preferable”

cəŋwt to tremble (366b)

(with art.) trembling

cəŋuy stative of tcot, cotc

cəŋuŋ time (masc.) (367b)

cəŋuy star (masc.) (368a)

cəŋy six (368b)

cəŋy corn, wheat (masc.) (369a)

cəŋy nəŋ bath (369b)

cəŋn, cəŋŋ to know (369b); prenominal cəŋn-, presuffixal cəŋwn-
coynt- price (possessed) (369b)
ciopy eunuch (371a)
cooyn to stretch, straighten, uphold (371a); presuffixal cooytn-.; stative cooytn "(is) upright, established"
cwoyq to gather, assemble (with e2oyh) (372a); stative cooyq "(is) assembled"
(with art.) gathering, assembly
cowy to despise (375a); presuffixal cow-; stative chwy "(is) despised, despicable"
ciwe to be, become bitter (376b); stative cae "(is) bitter"
(with art.) bitterness
cswwe to creep, crawl (376b)
cswwe field (fem.) (377a)
cswyp to stop, impede (377b)
cswq seven (378a)
cswyp to despise (376a); presuffixal cowq-
caq yesterday (378b)
(adv.) qacaq yesterday
cswq to defile, be impure (378b); stative cooq "(is)
defiled, impure"
chqe sword (fem.) (379a)
cw to deaf person (379b)
 cooq to remove (380a), reflexive; prenominal cae-.
presuffixal caew-
c2a1 to write (381b); presuffixal ca2-. ca2-; stative ch2 "(is) written"
ca2me provision, management (masc.) (385b)
oye2-ca2me to bid, instruct
(with art.) instruction
ca2oyorp- stative of ca2oy
ca2oy to curse (387a); prenominal ca2y-., caoye-.
presuffixal ca2oywp-; stative ca2oyorp- "(is)
cursed"
cayme woman, wife (385a); plur. zome
co6 fool (388a)
c6hrp to sail, wander (388b)
c6p2a2 to rest oneself (389b)
SABBATH (masc.)
caraphin Seraphim
carkikoc/on of the flesh
carp flesh (fem.)
n-catanac Satan
skandalize to cause to stumble, give offence
skandalon offence (masc.)
skoupte, skopete to joke
swma body (masc.)
cswmatikoc/on bodily, of flesh, physical
n-swthp the Saviour
sofia wisdom (fem.)
sfocos wise
spata to lead a wanton life, live lewdly
spoydaze to be eager, busy, earnest
spoyan zeal, earnest, eagerness (fem.)
斯塔yoros cross (masc.)
sy to strip bare, plunder
syntagwgh assembly, synagogue (fem.)
syntheia custom, habit (fem.)
synicte to present oneself
synteleia consummation, end (fem.)
symponei to be in agreement
sfragic seal (fem.)
sxhma monk’s habit (masc.)

PROPER NAMES:
csbbaton Sabbath
csarepta Sarepta, Zarephath (top.)
csarra Sarah
n-catanac Satan
scerkioc Sergios
sco Seth
schem Shem
sinkwn Simon
sinkoythioc Shenoute
scodem Sodom (top.)
spoudaioc Spudaio
Glossary

T (ΤΑΥ)

† to give, cause (392a); prenominal †- presuffixal ταυ-, stative τω "(is) given"; imperative μα. †
†- active deriving auxiliary

το share, part (fem.) (396a)

ξι-το to share

τω ετω "How can you compare...?" (396b)

tαίβε chest (fem.) (397a)

τηνβε finger (masc.) (397b)

τωσβε to repay, requite (398b)
(with art.) requital, revenge

τβα ten thousand (399a)

τβο to purify, hallow (399b); prenominal τβε-, presuffixal τβο- stative τβονυ "(is) pure"
(with art.) purity

τβηνη beast, cattle (400b); plur. τβηνογε

τβτ fish (401b)

τωβε to entreat, pray (402a)

τάιο, ταιο to honour, glorify (390b); prenominal ταε-, stative ταινυ "(is) honoured"

τωκ to be firm, strong (403a)

τωκ νηντ to take courage

τακο to destroy; to perish (405a)

τωκι θο do draw (sword) (406a); stative τοκι "(is) drawn"

τκας pain, disease (masc.) (407a)

ταλο to mount, ascend (408a)

τωλι to defile (410b); stative τολι "(is) defiled"

ταλε drop (411b)

ταλο to heal (411b)

τωμ to shut (up); to be shut (up) (412b); stative τωμ "(he) shut up"
(with art.) obtuseness

†νε town, village (414a) (masc.)

ταμιο to create (413a); prenominal ταμιε-; stative ταμινυ "(is) created"
(with art.) creation

ταμο to inform, tell (413b); prenominal ταμε-, presuffixal ταμο-
GLOSSARY

τμαίο to justify (415b); stative τμαίνη “(is) justified”
τμόα to feed, nourish (416a)
τψωμε to be fitting, appropriate (414b); stative τσωμε “(is) appropriate”
τψηκ to bury (416a); presuffixal τψηκ-
-της- see τψε
των quarrel, dispute (418a)
†-των to quarrel, dispute
τών (adv.) where? Whence? (417b)
τενογ (adv.) now (485a)
τοντη to be like, resemble (420a); stative τητων “(is) like”
τηνογ to send (419b)
της wing (masc.) (421a)
τανζο to keep alive, nourish (421a); prenominal τανζε-
presuffixal τανζο-
τανζογτ to trust, entrust (421b); presuffixal τανζογτ-
τόπ fold, lap (masc.) (422a)
†τε to taste (fem.) (423a)
τωπε to taste (423a); prenominal τεν-
ταπο mouth (fem.) (423b)
τόρρ all of ..., the whole of ... (424a)
πτωτη the All, the Universe (adv.) ἐπτωτη at all
τψηα hand (fem.) (425a); possessed τη-/τοοτ-
ἐτη-/ἐτοοτ- (prep.) “(to the hand of...)”
Ντη-/Ντοοτ- (prep.) “in the hands of...”
ητη-/ητοοτ- (prep.) “by (the hand of...”)
τωπη to seize, rob, plunder (430b)
(with art.) plunder
τριπ oven (fem.) (431b)
τρήα to tremble (431b)
τρρομπε see ρομπε
τοτη to pierce (432b)
τό to let drink (434a)
τσι to satisfy (also reflexive) (434a)
τσαβο to teach, enlighten (434b)
τσαβε-ειατ- to enlighten
GLOSSARY

τετο, στο to reject, repulse, turn out (436a); presuffixed τετος; stative (τ)στηθύ "(is) rejected"

τωτ to agree, be content (437b)

τουτο see τωρε

ττο to cause to give; prenominal ττε-

τθυ wind (masc.) (439b)

ταιογ fifty (440b)

τογ five (440b)

τουγ hill (masc.) (440b)

ταγο to send, put forth; to tell (441b)

τουγε shoc (masc.) (443b)

τουγο bosom (possessed) (444b)

πετσιτογο (one's) neighbour

τωγον to arise, stand up (445a)

τουγος to raise, set up (446b); prenominal τουγες-

ταγο to increase, multiply (452b)

τουγο to save (448b); prenominal τουγε, presuffixal τουγο-

ταγο to strengthen, make firm (462b)

τωγο to appoint, determine, ordain (449b)

(with art.) vocation, ordainment

τωγ to chaff (masc.) (453b)

τωγ to mingle, meddle, disturb (453b); presuffixal τω-

ταγο to meet, happen; to make to stand (with επατ-) (455a)

ταγο to be, become drunk (456b); stative ταγο "(is) drunk"

θο to be spoiled, become bad (457a)

τωγο to call, summon (458b)

τωβε to fix, plant (464a)

ταβιο to disgrace, condemn (465b); prenominal ταβιε-, presuffixal ταβιο-, stative (τ)σαθυ "(is) disgraced, condemned"

ταγγ, ταγα (adv.) quickly

ταλαγωφος miserable person

ταμειον, ταμιον inner chamber, private room

ταφος grave (masc.)

τελωνιον custom-house (masc.)
TEKHNI
TEKHINH
TELWNC
TIMPINIA
TOIMA
TOPOC
TOTE
TRAPNEZA
TPIAC
TRAPMH
TYRHNAOC

GLOSSARY

Glossary Terms:
craft, skill, profession (fem.)
artisan, craftsman
tax-collector
punishment, retribution (fem.)
to dare
holy place, shrine (masc.)
(adv.) then
table (fem.)
trinity
the Holy Trinity
nourishment (fem.)
tyrant

Proper Names:
tazom, tazum
Tahom (fem. name)
taurinoc
Taurinus
timothoec
Timothy

OY, Y (HE): Native OY-, Greek OY- or 2Y-
oya
blasphemy (masc.) (468b)
xi-oya to blaspheme
oyn
one (masc.) (469a)
ogy
one (fem.) (469a)
ogyei
(adv.) epogy far
ogyw
ofo, to have already done, finish doing (473b)
ogw
ofo, to bud, blossom (475a)
†-ogo to sprout, begin to blossom
(with art.) sprouting, blossoming
ogalab
stative of ogon
oghnh
priest (masc.) (488a)
ogbavy
ofo, to be, become white (476a)
(with art.) whiteness
ogoi, ogoei
wot (to ..., with -/nai-) (472b)
ogei
husbandsman (masc.) (473a)
ogei
light (masc.) (480a)
†-ogein to brighten, light up
ogwale
ofo, to flourish, be well off (477a); stative ogsole
"(is) flourishing"
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Entry</th>
<th>Meaning</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>οὐχ</td>
<td>to eat (478a); pronominal οὐχ-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>οὐμή</td>
<td>manger (masc.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>οὐον</td>
<td>(anything/any) one, (some) thing/(some) one (482a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>οὐσ</td>
<td>to open (482b); stative οὐσ “(is) open(ed)”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>οὐείν</td>
<td>to pass by, lapse (483b)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>οὐνο</td>
<td>hour (fem.) (484a); with definite article (adv.) τέ νο</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>οὐν-</td>
<td>“there is”, statement of existence (481a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>οὐντα-</td>
<td>“(he) has”, possession verboid (481a); pronominal οὐντε-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>οὐσνο</td>
<td>wolf (masc.) (485b)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>οὐνο</td>
<td>to rejoice (485b) (with art.) joy, gladness</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>οὐντά</td>
<td>(with ἐνολ) to make appear, manifest, show (also reflexive): to appear (486a); presuffixal οὐντα-, stative οὐντα “(is) manifest, apparent”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>οὐντα</td>
<td>to be, become pure, holy (487a); stative οὐντα “(is) holy”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>οὐροτ</td>
<td>to be glad, eager (490a); stative οὐροτ “(is) glad” (with art.) gladness, eagerness, zeal</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>οὐρομένη</td>
<td>foot (fem.) (491a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>οὐρος</td>
<td>time (masc.) (499a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>οὐσ</td>
<td>to wish, desire, love (500a); pronominal οὐσ-, presuffixal οὐσ- (with art.) wish, will, desire</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>οὐσί</td>
<td>night (fem.) (502a); with definite art. τέ οὐσί; plur. οὐσιογέ</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>οὐσώ</td>
<td>to answer (502a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>οὐσώτ</td>
<td>(with ττ-/τα-) to worship (504a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>οὐσώτ</td>
<td>to crush; to be crushed, worn down (505a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>οὐσώ</td>
<td>to add (with ε/-ετοτ-), lay; to stay, dwell, be settled; to follow (with ἃκα-) (505a); pronominal οὐσ-, presuffixal οὐσ-, stative οὐσ “(is) settled, dwells, follows”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>οὐσώθ</td>
<td>to repeat, answer, do again (509a) (adv.) οὐσώθ again</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>οὐσφε</td>
<td>dog (510a); with definite art. τέ οὐσφε; plur. οὐσφε</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>οὐσφε</td>
<td>to be safe, sound (511b); stative οὐσφ “(is) safe”</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
GLOSSARY

ογοδέ check, jaw (512a)
ογοδ-πο doorpost (masc.)

ογίονον (adv.) not only
γάλ matter, stuff (fem.)
γυαρκοντα (plur.) possessions
γυοκρίηκιε pretence
γυομείνε to suffer, endure, submit
γυομονῆη endurance, submission (fem.)
γυοπνήτευε to suspect
γυοταγή submission, submissiveness (fem.)
ογκία essence (fem.)

ϕ (PHI) (no Egyptian lexemes)

φανερόν (adv.) evidently, obviously
φαντασία fantasy (fem.)
φαρισαῖος Pharisee
φωνεῖ to envy, begrudge
φωνός envy (masc.)
φορέῖ to carry
φυσική nature (fem.)
φωνή voice (fem.)

PROPER NAMES:

φανωνᾶ Phenuel
φαραώ Pharao

χ (KHI) (no Egyptian lexemes)

χαρίς grace (fem.)
χαρά widow (fem.)
χρεία, χρία need, exigency (fem.)
π-χρεία to be in need
χριμά property (plur.)
χριστός, χριστός good, kind
χριστιανός, χριστιανός Christian

χριστός = Χριστός Christ
GW 246  GLOSSARY

κώρα  country, land, region (fem.)
κωπε  (prep.) without, apart from

PROPER NAMES:
χοσσορος  Chossoros (a high official)
χρησιππος  Chresippus

Ψ (PSI) (no Egyptian lexemes)

ψάλει  to sing, recite hymns
ψαλθρίων  psalter (masc.)
ψυχή  soul (fem.)

ω (O = O MEGA)

ωβετ  to forget, overlook (518b)
ωμέκ  to swallow (523a); presuffixal ομέκ-
ωμέτ  to be sunk, drown (523a); presuffixal ομέ-
ωνέ  stone (524a) (masc.)
ωνέχ  to live (525a); stative ονέ "(is) alive"
ωνόμα  to count, count as, consider (526a); prenominal εν-, presuffixal ονό-, stative ην "(is) numbered, counted, considered"
ωρά  to enclose, shut in, set apart; to be enclosed, be apart, secluded (528a)
ωράκ  to swear (529a)
ωράκα  to be firm, be confirmed, real (530a)
ωράκα (with art.) firmness, assurance, reality
ωράκα  to delay (530a)
ωρά  to read (out), call (out) (533a); prenominal εω-, αω-; presuffixal οω-
αω- αξω to sigh
αω- κακ to shout
ωρακά  to quench; to be quenched, extinguished (with εσω) (535a)
ωράρ  to fix, nail (536a); stative οράρ "(is) fixed, nailed"
ωρέ  (with επάρ-) αρεπάρ  to stand (up) (536a)
ωρά  to reap, harvest (538b); presuffixal ορώ-
Glossary

ωξη to expire, lapse, cease (539a)

ωφελεία use, advantage, benefit (fem.)

Proper Names:

2ωριγενης Origene

ψ (SHAI)

ψ-, εψ- to be able to (541a)

ψα to shine, rise (of the sun) (542b)

ψα festival (masc.) (543a)

ά-ψα to celebrate

ψα nose (masc.) (543b); possessed ωαντ-

ψε to go (544a); stative αν “(is) going”

ψε it behoves, it is befitting

ψένασις to be drowned

ψε wood (masc.) (546a)

ψε a hundred (546b)

ψι to measure (547b)

(with art.) measure

ψίμε to change; to be changed, to differ (551a); stative

ψόμε “(is) different”

ψεβεσσω repayment, exchange (fem.) (552b)

ψεφρ friend, mate (masc.) (553a); plur. ψεφρ; fem.

ψεφρ co- (or -mate), in compounds

ψψβζ to be scorched (554a); stative υψβζ “(is) scorched”

ψκακ cry, shout (556a)

αψκακ to cry out, shout (ψκακ)

ψκαλ to plunder (557b); presuffixal ωκαλ-

ψκαλ to pray (559a)

ψελεπτ bride (fem.) (560b)

μανψελεπτ wedding

ψλογ disgrace (masc.) (561b)

ψυμ small person, amount: small (563a)

ψυμ summer (masc.) (564b)

ψμο strange person, stranger (565b)
Glossary

ψήμω — stranger (fem.)
ψωμτ-, ψωμήτ — three (566b)
(fem.) ψομτε
ψώμε — to serve, worship (567a)
ψην — tree (masc.) (568b)
ψηνε — to ask, inquire, seek (with ἀνε-) (569a)
ψώνε — to be, become ill (570b)
(with art.) disease
ψαν-2θν-, ψεν-2θν-, ψην-2θν- (to be ill)
at heart, pitying
ψαντ- — see ψα δ nose
ψομτε — thorn (fem.) (573a)
ψνωγ — to stink (573b)
ψωπ — to receive, accept (574b); prenominal ψπ-; ψεν-,
presuffixal ψον-, stative ψηπ “(is) ac-
ceptable”
ψιε — to be ashamed (576b)
(with art.) shame
†-ψιε — to put to shame
ψωπε — to happen, take place; to become, come into
existence (577b); stative ψονπ “(is) in ex-
istence”
ψηπρε — wonder, cause for amazement (fem.) (581a)
ψάρ — to strike (583b)
ψαρε — sheepfold (fem.) (584a)
ψηρε — son (masc.) (584a)
ψηρε ψηρ child, son
ψεερε — daughter (fem.) (584a)
ψεερε ψηρ child, girl
ψρπι — to be early; to do as first, do first (586a)
(with art.) dawn, early morning
ψρπ, ψρπ-πι- —
first (587a)
(adv.) ψρππι, ψρπι at first
ψρππι- — to do first, early
ψρρψι — to wreck, destroy (589a); prenominal ψρρψι-,
presuffixal ψρψψι-
ψςς — shepherd (masc.) (589b)
ψςε — in (adv.) ψςε ςε suddenly (589b)
ψτορτι — to trouble; to be troubled (597b); stative
ψτι — ς τι “(is) troubled”
(with art.) trouble
GLOSSARY

ψωωτ to cut, kill, sacrifice; to deprive; to be deprived, lack (590a); stative ψωρτ "(is) deprived. lacking" (with art.) cutting
(adv.) ζηογψωωτ εις decisively

ψτεκο prison (masc.) (595b); plur. ψτεκωγ

ψωτη to shut (595b); presuffixal ψωτης, stative ψωτη "(is) shut"

ψταμ to shut up; to be shut up (with ε-/επ-, επω-) (596a)

ψαγ worth. value (masc.) (599a)

ψωογε to be, become dry (601b)

ψωγο to flow; to empty; to be empty (602a); stative ψωγειτ "(is) empty"

ψωυ to scatter; to be scattered (603b)
(with art.) scattering

ψωγγωγ (reflexive) to pride oneself, boast (604a)
(with art.) pride

ψωψ to lay waste; to be laid waste (609b)
(with art.) laying waste

ψωντε impious, iniquitous person (611b)

ψακε to speak, talk (612a)
(with art.) word(s), speech

ψωψακε, ψακε to wrestle, struggle (615a)

ψοξνε to counsel; to take counsel (615b)
(with art.) counsel

ψωδνομ to take, receive counsel

PROPER NAMES:

ψενογτε Shenoute

q (FAI)

ψι to carry, take (620a); prenominal ψι-, presuffixal ψιτ-
ψι εξαι to raise
(with art.) raising

ψιτ, ψιτ worm (623b)

ψωτε to wipe out (624a); prenominal ψετ-, presuffixal ψετ-

ψτοογ four (625a)
GLOSSARY

2 (HORI)

2αε last (occasion)
2αη end (fem.)
2ε to fall (637a)
2ε, εε “yes” (64h)
2ε manner, way (fem.) (638b)

καταβαθε as. like (“in the manner of .../ that ...”)

(adv.) ιτειζε thus, in this manner

καλωνε how? (“in what manner?”)

2Η belly, inner part (642b); possessed 2Ητ-

2Η forepart, front (fem.) (640b)

(adv.) 2Ηθ before

2ΗΗ way, road (fem.) (646a); plur. 2Ηθυε

2ο face (masc.) (646b)

κι-2ο to be prejudiced in favour, to be partial
to suffice (651a)

...2ωω- reinforcer: “... for (his) part”, “... he too”;

(651b), 1st sgl. 2ω, 2ωωτ, 2nd sgl. fem.

2ωυτε

2ωβ work, deed, affair, thing (abstract) (masc.)

(653a); plur. 2βηυε

-2ωβ to work

2βα embarassment, misfortune (masc.) (656a)

2βω. see 2οq

2βογγρ left hand, left side (656b)

2βηκ lamp (masc.) (658a)

2βωκε to cover (with εκτ-) (658a); prenominal 2βκε-

2βοοκ clothes, garment, linen (659b); plural 2βωκε

garment (fem.) (660a)

2βηυε plur. of 2ωβ

2αι husband (masc.) (636b)

2ακ mild, sober person (660a)

2ακε poor person (664a)

2κο to hunger (663b); stative 2κειτ “(is) hungry

2αλ in 2-2αλ to deceive, beguile (664b)

2ωλ to fly (665b); stative 2ωλ “(is) flying”

2ωλ to throw (666b); prenominal 2ωλ-

2οοε moth (667a)
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Greek</th>
<th>English</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ἀλαο</td>
<td>old man, old person (669b); plur. ἀλοι</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀλω</td>
<td>old woman</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀλοολε</td>
<td>to nurse child (669a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀλατ</td>
<td>fowl (masc.) (671a); plur. ἀλατε, ἀλατε</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀλοδ</td>
<td>to be, become sweet (673a); stative ἀλοδ “(is) sweet”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(with art.) sweetness</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀμ</td>
<td>to tread, trample (674b)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀμοι</td>
<td>“Would that …!” (wish) (675a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀιμε</td>
<td>plur. of ἀιμε</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀε</td>
<td>forty (676a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀεωομε</td>
<td>forty-three</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀογ</td>
<td>salt (masc.) (676b)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀομε</td>
<td>heat, fever, heat (fem.) (677b)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀομε</td>
<td>in ἀομε to steer, guide (677b)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀοοοσ</td>
<td>to sit, sit down (with ἐκατ), dwell (679a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀομτ, ἀομτ</td>
<td>copper, money (678a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀοτ</td>
<td>grace, gift (masc.) (681a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀσαλ</td>
<td>slave, servant (665a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀον</td>
<td>inside part (685a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(adv.) ἐκον inside, in</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀων</td>
<td>to draw near (with ἐκον) (687a); stative ἀων “(is) near”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀων</td>
<td>to bid, enjoin (with ἐκον) (688a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀοηβ</td>
<td>to doze, sleep (691a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀας, ἐκας</td>
<td>“(is) willing” (690a); prenominal (ἐ)ἀας-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀας-</td>
<td>to be willing</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀο, ἀου</td>
<td>vessel, object, thing (concrete) (692b)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀαν</td>
<td>law, judgement, sentence (masc.) (693b)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀοπ</td>
<td>to hide (695a); prenominal ἐκαπ-, presupflexal ἐκαπ-, stative ἀοπ “(is) hidden”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(with art.) hiding</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀπε</td>
<td>food (fem.) (701a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀπε</td>
<td>see ἐκατ</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐκατ, ἐπε</td>
<td>upper part (masc.) (698a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(adv.) ἐκατ up</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(adv.) ἐκατ above</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐκατ</td>
<td>lower part (700a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(adv.) ἐκατ down</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
GLOSSARY

2pê
form, likeness (masc.) (701b)
\(\chi \cdot 2pê\) to take form

2pok
to be still; to cease (702b)

2poy
voice (masc.) (704b); possessed 2pê-, plur.
2poye
\(\chi \cdot 2pê\) to raise one's voice

2poy
to be, become heavy, difficult, severe (706a);
static pouy "(is) heavy, difficult, severe"
2poy-\&h long-suffering person
to keep, guard (with -) (707b)

2apê2
to withdraw (716b)

2acie
in ōm2acie to be drowned (710a)
2ace
to toil, trouble (710a)
(with art.) toil, suffering

2at
silver (masc.) (713b)

2ht
heart (masc.) (714a); possessed 2\&h-
\&óh stupid, pın2h\&t clever

2ht-
see 2h

2iteat
pit (718a)

2wt
in ōm2wt to sail (718b)

2ote
fear (fem.) (720b)

pōm-2ote to fear

2ote2e
in ōm2ote2e to fear (720b)

2ote
in ōm2ote to fear (721a)

2ote2e
clothes, garment (fem.) (720b)

2ote2e
to murder (723b); prenominal 2e\&te-, presuffixal
2ote2-

2ote2e
to be reconciled (724b)

2\&te-
see 2\&t heart

2to
horse (masc.) (723a); plur. 2twop

2tôm2h
in ōm2tôm2h to be dulled, darkened (724a)

2tô
in ōm2tô to be joined (726a); static 2tô "(is) joined"

2top
necessity, compulsion (masc.) (726b)

2twop
see 2to

2tôtô2e, 2tôtô2e
to inquire, examine (728a)

2hy
profit (masc.) (729a)

\(\ddot{\imath} \cdot 2\imath\) to profit

2iêoye
see 2ih

2oy
day (masc.) (730a)

(adv.) ōm2oy today

2oy
(stative) "(is) bad, evil" (731a)

2ooy (noun) evil, "(that which is evil)"

2wôy
to rain (732a)
(with art.) rain
Glossary

20γε
rain (compound with πε sky)
to cast, strike (732b); prenominal 21-, presuffixal 21τ-

20γο
excess, surplus (masc.) (735a)
(adv.) ἄν20γο more, rather

20γείτε
beginning, first occasion (fem.) (738a)

20ογτ
male, man (738b)

2ωγ
to be in distress (740a); stative 2ωγ “(is) in distress”

20ή
snake (740b)
(fem.) 2ωβ

2α2
many, much (741b)

For words of Greek origin beginning with 2, see under the second letter.

Proper Names:

2ωριγενής
Origene

2φαββεί
Rabbi (title)

2φεβεκκά
Rebecca

Χ (DJANDJA)

ΧΗ
vanity, emptiness (747b)
ΕΠΧΗ for no reason

ΧΙ
in vain

ΧΙ
to take, receive (747b); prenominal ΧΙ-, presuffixal ΧΙΤ- ΧΗΒΟΙ violence (ΒΟΙ)

ΧΗΗ
see ΧΗ

ΧΟ
to sow, send forth (752a)

ΧΩ
say (754a); prenominal ΧΩ-, ΧΙ-, presuffixal ΧΟΟ-; ΧΟΟ “to say (it)”

ΧΙ-ΟΥΑ to blaspheme

ΧΙ-ΒΟΛ to lie

ΧΩ-
(possessed) head (756a)

ΧΩΒΕΚ
coal (760a)

ΧΑΙ
desert (masc.) (745b)

ΧΟ2ΕΙ, ΧΟ1
ship, boat (masc.) (754a)
GLOSSARY

χωκ (with ἐβολα) to complete, accomplish; to be completed, perfect (761a); prenominal χεκ-, stative χνκ “(is) accomplished, perfect”

χωκμ to wash (763a)

χοολες moth (fem.) (769a)

χαμη calm (fem.) (770a)

χωσιη book (masc.) (770a)

χενα to be quenched, die out (774a)

χνογ ask (774b); prenominal χεγ-, presuffixal χνογ-

χνοογ threshing-floor, barn (masc.) (776b)

χναγ forcarm, force (777a)

χιναχ see χη

χπιο to blame, reproach (778b)

χπο to cause to exist, beget (778b); presuffixal χπο-

χωρ to sharpen, whet (781a)
(with art.) sharpness, edge

χερο to light, kindle fire (781b); prenominal χερη-

χωσρε (with ἐβολα) to scatter, disperse (782a); presuffixal χοορ-

χωσρε strong, brave person (784b)

χρο, δρο (with ἐ-) to be stronger, overcome, vanquish (783a)

χωρμ to beckon, signal (785b)

χροπ, δροπ obstacle, hindrance (masc.) (786b)

καιροπ, ἔροπ to put an obstacle (before someone)

χοειτ lord, master (787b)

πνοειτ the Lord

χιε to raise, exalt; to be, become tall, high (788b); stative χιε "(is) high, exalted"
(with art.) high part, height
(adv.) ἐνχιε high

χιειτ arrogant

χιειτ olive tree, olive fruit (790b)

χωτε to pierce, traverse, enter (791b)

χιογη to steal (793b)
(with art.) stealth
(adv.) ἔχιογη stealthily

χοογ to send forth, dispatch (793a)—
GLOSSARY  255

χωζ
to touch (797a)
χωζμī
to defile; to be defiled (797b); stative χωζμ “(is) defiled”
(with art.) defilement, impurity
χαξε
enemy (799b)

δ (CHIMA)

δω

to stay, remain, persist (803a)
δωβ

to stay, remain, persist (803b)
δαιε
ugly, disfigured person (466a)
δολ
lie, falsehood; hier (806b)
ξι-δολ to lie
δαλε
cripple, lame person (807b)
δοειλε, δοιλε
to dwell, sojourn (807b)
δοδ
bed (masc.) (815a)
δομ
power, potency, capability (fem.) (815b)
ουν-δομ/μην-δομ “it is possible”/“it is impossible”
ατδομ impossible
(ω)δινδομ
to be able, find the power (δινε)
δωμ
vineyard, garden (817b)
δαμογα
camel (818b)
διε
to find (820a); prenominal δι-, presuffixal διντ-
δοντε
violence, wrongdoing in χινδοντε to do wrong, do violence (822a)
δωντ to rage, be furious (822b); stative δοντ “(is) raging”
(with art.) rage
βεπν

to make haste, hurry (825a)
(with art.) hurry
(adj.) ζνογβεπν quickly
βωπε
to catch (825b); prenominal βεπ-, presuffixal βοπ-
βρο
see ξρο
βερσβ
rod, stick (828a)
βρομπε
pigeon (828a); plur. βρομπε
βροπ
see ξροπ
βερσβ
hunter (masc.) (831a)
GLOSSARY

6ωρδ (with ε-) to waylay (830a); stative 6ορδ “(is) in ambush, is lurking”

6ροθ seed, sprouting of seed (masc.) (831b)

6ροθε to be in want, be needy (829b)
(with art.) need

6οσθ darkness (masc.) (832b)

6οτ size, form (833a)

6ωμτη to look; to expect, wait for (with εμολ γνθ-) (837)

6ογδ to gnash (teeth)
(with art.) gnashing

6ηχ hand (fem.) (839b)

6ωχθ to be less; to be humble (841b); stative 6οχθ “(is) humble”
BIBLIOGRAPHY

A. ABBREVIATED BIBLIOGRAPHICAL REFERENCES

Coptic Source References

BKU  Aegyptische Urkunden aus den koenigl. Museen zu Berlin: Koptische Urkunden (Berlin, 1904).
BM  British Museum (British Library) Oriental MSS (unpubl.).
Ch.  E. CHASSINAT. Le quatrième livre des entretiens et épîtres de Shenouti (Cairo 1911).
IF  Cairo, Institut Français d'Archéologie Orientale, unpubl. codex.
K  Vienna, Nationalbibliothek, unpubl. Coptic MSS
Leyd.  PLEYTE-BOEGER, Manuscrits copistes du Musée d'antiquités des Pays-Bas à Leide (Leiden 1897).
Ming.  G.L. MINGARELLI, Aegyptiorum codicum religiae ... (Bologna 1785)
Miss.  E. AMÉLINEAU, Monuments pour servir à l'histoire de l'Égypte chrétienne ... (Mem. Miss. Archéol. Française 4/1, Paris 1888) 277-287.
Mun.  H. MUNIER, Manuscrits copistes (Cairo 1916)
Orig.  T. ORLANDI, Shenute contra Origenistas (Rome 1986)
P  Paris, Bibliothèque Nationale, fonds copte (unpubl. MSS)
Rossi  I. ROSSI, I papiri copti del Museo egizio di Torino (Turin, 1887-1892)
Wess. 9, Wess. 18  C. WESSELY, Studien zur Palaeographie und Papyruskunde IX (Leipzig 1909) and XVIII (Leipzig 1917)
BIBLIOGRAPHY

Z  G. Zöega, Catalogus codicum copticorum manusciptorum… (Rome 1810)

B. REFERENCES TO GRAMMATICAL DISCUSSIONS

BIBLIOGRAPHY


TILL: W. Till, Koptische Grammatik: saidischer Dialekt², Berlin 1961


INDEX TO GRAMMATICAL TERMS OCCURRING IN THE TEXTUAL NOTES

(The index is selective and refers mostly to phenomena not especially illustrated in the Chrestomathy. References are to pages).

article see “determination of nouns”
assimilation 4, 15
augens, see “reinforcer”
auxiliary verbs 5, 13, 17, 34, 35, 55, 58, 91
backgrounding 36, 38
bracketing 14
compound verb 35, 49, 55, 131
descriptive verbs 12, 91
determination of noun 7, 8, 9, 10, 17, 19, 22, 23, 26, 29, 31, 46, 74, 93, 96, 98, 100, 114, 154
direct object 22, 25, 68, 73, 74, 77, 91ff., 131
feminine pronoun for neuter see “neuter”
“figura Sinuthiana” 125
gender 19, 24, 28
glossing, hermeneutical 23, 24, 30, 124
impersonal 51; see “neuter”
inalienable possession 6, 30, 63, 97
juncture see “prosody”
laryngeal consonant 55, 78
letter/narrative opening role of the Cleft Sentence 52, 127
lexeme premodifier 58, 88, 93, 139
“manner”: “in the manner of”, “like” (etc.) 21, 34
negation 12, 15, 24, 27, 42, 77, 78, 91, 130, 142, 163
neuter 14, 38ff., 51, 53, 67, 102, 114, 139, 144
nucleus 23
object construction 12, 74, 91, see “direct object”
passive voice 30, 37, 91, 92
predicate 24, 25, 28
prenominal form (“construct state”) of infinitive 52, 93
prosody 19, 22, 37, 86, 96
reflexive mode of action 53
reinforcer 5, 6, 9, 11, 16, 34, 36, 37, 55, 78
resumption 22, 24, 26, 59, 68, 74, 114, 124, 127, 155
rhetorical question 16, 20, 27, 44, 63, 64, 75, 77, 85, 89, 113, 152
syllabic nasal 87
“tautological infinitive” 60
“that” form 146ff.
theme 81, 86
topic, topicalization 80, 88, 100
transitive/intransitive verb 35, 91ff.
“vocative” 4, 28, 53, 69
zero morpheme (pronoun) 6, 34, 39, 44, 55, 77, 96
zero object 59
zeroing 6, 35, 36, 37, 51, 85, 87
TERMINOLOGICAL GLOSSARY AND CORRESPONDENCE LIST

German and French conventional equivalents are suggested only for such terms as are not simply and unambiguously transposable from English (as are e.g. "adverb", "theme", "intransitive"). Equivalence is often approximate; so are definitions and explanations given, which are practically conceived and often valid only for the application of the term in Coptic.

The user is referred to current reliable linguistic terminological dictionaries, such as: (English:) Hartmann & Stork (London, 1972); Crystal, Oxford 1985 (2nd edition); (German:) Abraham, Tübingen 1974; Lewandowsky, Heidelberg 1976 (2nd edition); Stammerjohann, München 1974; (French:) Marouzeau, Paris 1951; Mounin, Paris 1974 (also Dictionnaire Larousse de la linguistique, Paris 1973).

abstract noun (Abstraktum; nom abstrait): a noun referring to a notion or non-material concept ("happiness", "falsehood", "truth", "coming" as in "the coming of the Normans").

actor (Agens; agent): the noun or pronoun expressing the carrier-out of an active action, or the undergoer of a passive action, or the one who is in a state ("grammatical subject": John in "John hit the ball" or "John was hurt" or "John is happy").

adjective: a class of words typically qualifying nouns ("red", "old" in "the old woman’s red shawl").

"Adjective Verbs" (Copt.) ("Eigenschaftsverba"; "verbes adjectifs", "(quasi-)
"(quasi-) verbes de qualité"): a closed set of special synthetic conjugation forms with a suffixed theme, predicating quality ("... is good", "... is fair", "... is numerous" etc.).

adjunct: an optional or secondary element in a construction, typically extending or qualifying the meaning of another; it is not a main structural element; approx. = modifier, satellite, expansion ("good" in "the good soldier", "quickly" in "He moved quickly", "tomorrow" in "Come and see me tomorrow").

adnaxal: a verb form attaching a rhematic element to a clause or phrase ("gone" in "I found him gone"; "cry" in "Listen to him cry!"; "he being..." in "I forgave him. he being my brother"; "hot" in "some like it hot").
adnominal: expanding or modifying a noun or pronoun ("yellow" in "a yellow book", "charming" in "this charming lady", "flowing" in "the river, flowing North, meets the lake", "who..." and "whom...") in "She, who is standing there, is my sister", "John, whom I have known for a long time, came to dinner", "that...") in "all that glitters").

adverb: an element typically qualifying or specifying a clause, an action, state or quality ("quickly", "well", "on the table", "in fact", "still", "sadly", "very").

adverbal: expanding a verb form or a clause.

adverbial phrase (Adverbialsyntagma [adverbielle Bestimmung]; syntagme adverbiale [complément circonstanciel]): a syntagm in the role of an adverb; often a prepositional phrase ("at all", "on the wall", "for whom?" "like a fly").

affective: characterized by a marked emotional attitude.

Akhmimism: a feature peculiar to the Akhmimic dialect of Coptic.

alternation, alternant: interchange of elements regulated (conditioned) by an isolable environmental factor (examples: t/d as pronounced forms of the past simple mark after English verbs: [kist], [lovld]; t/d as pronounced final/non-final base termination in German: [das rat] "wheel", gen. [des rades]; zero and [z] as pronounced alternants of final -s in French les: [le livre] (plur.), [lezami]).

anaphora, see resumption.

antecedent (Beziehungswort; antécédent): the nominal or pronominal nucleus of a relative clause ("the man" in "the man who came to dinner", "you" in "you who are my friend").

aorist (Copt.): a special conjugation form expressing general, natural or habitual action.

apodosis: the result or consequence (follow-up) constituent of a conditional sentence (the second clause of "If you come tomorrow, I shall show you the book").

apposition: a type of phrase in which the nucleus is a proper name, noun or pronoun and the expansion another noun or pronoun, with no intermediating linking mark ("John, my friend", "I, the
miserable", "my friend the General" "New York, this immense beehive").

article (also "determinator"): a pronominal grammatical element attached to the noun and characterizing it for its degree of definition ("a", "some", "another", "this", "the", "any"; also zero, as in "fighting disease", "the origins of man").

asynthetic: not bound by formal means (other then zero) ("I remained standing — I couldn't find a chair").

attributive(ly) (attributiv; épithète): the role of a modifier or descriptive expansion of a noun ("good" in "the good soldier").

augens: see reinforcer.

auxiliary verb (Hilfsverb; verbe auxiliaire): a lexically empty (or relatively empty) verb carrying out the grammatical functions in syntagm with a more or less invariable lexeme ("have" in "I have come", "make" in "make love", "did" in "He did not come").

base (Copt.): a prefixed morpheme in certain verbal clause patterns, characterizing the action for tense and in some cases also for affirmative or negative.

(to) bracket, bracketing (Klammerdarstellung): the analytical schematic presentation of the reference or application of an element to several following ones on (which are presented as being a different analytical rank). ("The [cats and dogs]", "[cats'-and-dog's] meat", "[old book] seller", "She is [alive and well]").

category, grammatical: the notion(s) expressed by a paradigm (e.g. "person", "number", "determination", "tense").

causal clause (Kausalsatz; proposition causale): a clause expressing cause or reason.

causative: a verb form expressing the causing or letting an action to be carried out (by another) ("You made him cry", "Let me go!").

circumstantial (Copt.) (Umstandssatz; circonstantiel): a clause marked by a special conversion as adnexal to another clause or noun/pronoun; often translatable as circumstance ("...ing" as in "I found him eating supper", "Walking home, I met Joan"; "when...", "while...").
clause (Teilsatz; proposition): an independent or dependent unit combining theme and rheme in nexus.

Cleft Sentence (Spalttsatz, phrase coupée): a construction in which a non-verbal element (noun, pronoun or adverbial) is marked as focus and a verb is marked as topic ("It is God who will provide", "It was yesterday (that) I saw him last", "C'est toi qui 'as changé, pas moi").

cluster (Konsonantenhaefung; groupe consonantique): a sequence of non-syllabic consonants (esp. initial: "pr-", "cl-", "spl-").

compatible: two elements are compatible if they occur combined and adjoining in a syntagm (e.g. "yesterday" and (past simple), as in "Yesterday I found a letter in my mailbox"; [n] and [t] in final and medial position, as in "don't", "hunting"; "many" and "a", as in "many a man").

conditioning, conditioned (Bedingung, bedingt; conditionnement, conditionné): a type of dependence in which one element or form is determined by a quality of, or by another element in its environment; the conditioned element is no longer commutable (examples: in "These are my dogs", the form "are" and the -s plur. are conditioned by the form of the demonstrative "these". In "Ta fille est jolie", the fem. form of the adjective is conditioned by the fem. noun. In the English (past simple), the pronounced suffix is [t], [d] are conditioned by preceding voiceless or voiced consonants, respectively: [kist], [mu:v]; a past tense in a dependent clause is conditioned by a main-clause past tense, as in "He said that he would come").

Conditional (Copt.) (Konditionalis; conditionnel): a special conjugation form expressing the protasis ("if..." constituent) of a condition.

conjugation, conjugation form (Copt.): the grammatical variation of a verb clause pattern by actor; a form so varying in a specific pattern.

conjunctive (Copt.): a special dependent conjugation form expressing mainly the "carrying on" or extending of a preceding verb form: see also microcoordination.

consonant: a type of speech sound produced by obstructing the passage of air in the mouth (p, t, k, g, d etc.).
construction: the grammatical arrangement of elements.

conversion, converters (Copt.): the morphosyntactic phenomenon of marking the syntactic status of a clause; a set of prefixed morphemes marking the syntactic status of a clause.

coordination: two or more elements or syntagms in an "X and Y" interdependence.

copula (Copt.): an element formally marking a nexus between theme and rheme in a Nominal Sentence (English "is" as in "My father is a teacher" is comparable to a degree).

definite: specific, familiar, assumed as known, unambiguously identifiable; determinated by a definite determinator ("the man"; "God"; "this house"; "my brother").

deictic: pointing out or indicating.

delocutive: pertaining to the third persons ("he", "she", "it", "they").

demonstrative pronoun: a pronoun pointing out, pointing at or indicating ("this", "that").

dependent clause (Nebensatz, abhaengiger Satz, Gliedsatz; proposition subordonnée, dépendante): a clause formally marked as dependent upon another ("when..." in "He laughed when I told him you wanted to see him", "till" in "Why shouldn't we go on seeing each other till we are tired of it?", "what" in "He rubbed what was left of the pommede upon his scalp", "who" in "The girl who came to dinner yesterday is his sister").

deriving (ableitend; dérivant): forming a semantically related, semantically and often grammatically different word from another (e.g. noun from verb, verb from noun, noun from noun etc.: e.g. the deriving suffixes -ize, -en as in "circularize" from "circular", "whiten" from "white"; -or as in "actor" from "act"; -ship as in "hardship" from "hard"; -ess as in "heiress" from "heir").

determination, to determinate, determinator: marking a noun with respect to specificity and definiteness; the marker of a noun with respect to specificity and definiteness (see also article).

dialogue: a conversational type of discourse, ideally alternating between two speakers.

discourse (Diskurs, Rede, Text; discours, texte): a stretch of real attested text.
disjunction: two or more elements or syntagms in an “X or Y” interdependence; a morph marking this interdependence.

durative (Dauerzeit, Dauer-; duratif): (of an action) in progress, continuous, repetitive (“I was writing” as against “I wrote”).

enclitic: a morph (e.g. particle) of weak stress and a tendency to follow and attach itself to a preceding unit carrying full stress (“then” in “Well then!”; German doch, French donc).

existant: the term stated as existing in an existential statement (“There was a king”).

expansion; to expand (Erweiterung, erweitern; expansion, élargissement, élargir): addition of further elements (usually modifying or qualifying), without affecting the basic grammatical structure or relations (“lovely” and “whom…” expand “the girl” in “the lovely girl whom you saw there is his daughter”; “immediately” and “when…” expand the verb in “She immediately fainted when she heard he was alive”; “quickly” expands “come” in “Come quickly!”).

extraposition; to extrapose (approx. segmentation, anticipation): a noun is extraposed when placed in front of a clause, to mark it as topic (“Man or woman — it made no difference to Minty”, “as for the soup — it has been ready long ago”).

feminine (weiblich, Femininum; féminin): a term, often marked, in the grammatical category of gender; in animates, typically referring to the female sex (“she-wolf”, “heiress”, “heureuse”, “die” in “die Sache”).

final clause: a dependent clause expressing purpose or willed result.

finite: (of a verb form) characterized for person (“I wished”, “They are sleeping”, “We were about to leave”, “He had been beaten up”).

to finitize: to render finite.

first person: the speaker persons (“I”, “we”).

focus; focal; focalization (= focussing): the center or highlight of the communication stretch (sentence and sentence complex) (It was ONLY WHEN SHE WAS TWENTY that she fell in love for the first time”, “YOU certainly did not waste much time”; “She DID lose her purse that day”, “How COULD you behave like this?”, “Damn it all, this
isn't the Sahara. We're only thirty-six hours from Picadilly"; marking as focal; pertaining to the focus.

function, to function (Funktion, Leistung; fonction): the role played by an element of language and its structural relationship to other elements; to play such a role.

gender (grammatisches Geschlecht, Genus; genre grammatical): a grammatical category (of nouns, pronouns) displaying such contrast as masculine: feminine: neuter, animate: inanimate ("he, she, it", "lion, lioness", "wolf, she-wolf" "bon, bonne", "der, die, das").

gloss, to gloss: the interpreting explanation or specification of a word that is considered obscure or in need of interpretation; to explain or specify such a word.

to govern (regieren; régir): to require (condition) or determine a certain form or element; often used of verbs governing certain prepositions ("differ" governs "from-", "care" governs "for-", "to accustom [someone]" governs "with-").

ermeneutical: see gloss, to gloss.

imperative: an addressed verb form expressing command (or forbidding) or direct request ("Listen, Kate", "Trust me", "Come here!", "Don't tell me that").

Imperfect (Copt.): a special conjugation form (the preterite conversion of the present form) expressing durative action in the past (cf. "I was writing").

impersonal: a 3rd person pronoun with no reference to any specific noun; a clause in which such pronoun serves as theme ("it" or "es" in "It is raining", "It ails me", "Es geht").

inalienable possession (unveraueusserlicher Besitz, possession inalienable): a type of possession that is formally marked as inherent, close or intimate (e.g. in many languages, the "belonging" to each other of family members. one's parts of the body, one's name etc.).

incompatible: elements are said to be compatible if they never occur as combined in a syntagm, but in substitution to each other (e.g. "when" and "while", "a-" and [plur.]" -s", "three" and "a", [n] and [t] initially in English).
indefinite, indefinite determinator (unbestimmt, unbestimmter Artikel; indéfini, article indéfini): a non-specific individual or specimen of a class; a morpheme marking an element as a non-specific or individual or specimen of a class ("a man", "some cats", "someone", "three stones", "other gods" etc.).

independent clause (selbstaendiger Satz; proposition indépendante, principale): a clause that is formally marked as autonomous.

indeterminable: a nominal or pronominal element that is incompatible with determinators (e.g. "this", "you", "some").

infinitive: a nominal non-finite form of the verb ("to go"); (Copt.) the verb lexeme.

infix, to infix: a bound morpheme ("affix") attached inside a word; to attach a morpheme in this position (e.g. the nasal in the Latin present stems rump-, lingu-; the English number opposition of the type "tooth": "teeth", or tense oppositions of the type "ring": "rang"; "ne" in the negated form of the finite verb in French: "je-veux", "je-ne-veux pas").

interlocutive: pertaining to the first and/or second persons ("you", "toi", "vous").

intransitive: (of a verb) not governing an object (the verbs in "He ran all the way home", "This chimney smokes", "She warmed to him", "Something may turn up", "He felt sick").

"irrealis": see remote (hypothetical) condition.

jussive: the delocutive (third person) imperative (Lat. esto, Gk. ἀκούειν, Engl. "Let him wait!").

laryngal (consonant; also glottal): a speech sound produced in, the larynx (e.g. [h], [']. ['] = ["Aleph"], ["Ajin"]).

lexeme: the basic unit of the lexicon or vocabulary.

(to) mark, marker: to characterize formally; a formal characteristic.

marked (merkmalshaft; marqué): the term of an opposition that is positive with regard to the presence of a specific linguistic feature (e.g. the plural in many languages as against the singular, with regard to the feature "number"; in French and Semitic, the feminine as against the masculine, with regard to the feature "gender"; in English, the past progressive as against the past simple, with regard to the feature "mode of action").
masculine (maennlich; masculin): a term, often unmarked, in the grammatical category of gender; in animates, typically referring to the male sex ("wolf", "heir", "heureux", "der").

microcoordination (Copt.): a special closely-knit kind of coordination expressed by the conjunctive form.

modal: expressing or pertaining to mood; the attitude of the speaker towards the stated action (e.g. wish, command, obligation, request, exhortation).

mode-of-action (Aktionsart; mode d'action): the manner of evolvement of an action (e.g. commencing, repeated, durative, terminating etc.).

modification; to modify; modifier: a describing expansion; to expand descriptively; an element expanding another descriptively ("red", "quickly" are modifiers in "The red fox jumped quickly over the hedge").

morph: a discrete, segmentable unit of discourse or text (e.g. "she", "recognize", "d", "at" "once", "that", "the", "moment", "had" "pass", "ed" in "She recognized at once that the moment had passed").

morpheme: a distinctive meaningful unit of grammar (e.g. {she}, {(e)d}, {that}, {had + (e)d}, {at} in "She recognized at once that the moment had passed").

narrative: a textual type reciting a tale, chronicle, history, report etc.; grammatical phenomena occurring in or pertaining to such a textual type.

negativizing (vereinend, niant): rendering negative.

nexus: the special interdependence and link of theme and rheme.

neuter, neutric (saechlich; neutre genre): the term in the category of gender that is neither feminine nor masculine ("it"; "das Maedchen", "gutes ...”).

neutralization (Aufhebung, Neutralisierung; neutralisation): the cancelling or suppression of an opposition in a given environment (following [s], the opposition [d:t] is neutralized in favour of [t], as in "kissed" [kist]; following "three", the opposition of number is neutralized in favour of {plural}, as in "three dogs"; following a
main-clause past tense, the opposition (past: non-past) is neutralized in the dependent clause in favour of {past}, as in "He said that he would come".

nominal: pertaining to a noun; with the grammatical properties of a noun.

"Nominal Sentence" ("Nominalsatz"; "phrase nominale"): a clause pattern predicking a pronoun or noun (the clauses "This is Anthony", "You are not yourself", "It's cold", "It's winter", "He is sincere", "It is I", "This is my wife", "Your god is Mammon" are verbal clauses corresponding to Egyptian or Semitic Nominal Sentences).

to nominalize: to mark as nominal.

noun (Nomen; nom): a word class with a specific composite set of constructional and/or morphological properties (e.g. [Coptic] being preceded by an article or quantifier, by a special form of prepositions, occurring as rheme in the Nominal Sentence, having a plural form, being representable by a pronoun, etc.; [English] being preceded by an article or quasntifier, compatible with a plural suffix, with a possessive article — "my friend" etc.)

nucleus, grammatical the grammatical center: the grammatically important, definitive or decisive constituent of a syntagm that is not a clause (i.e. of a phrase) (e.g. "hat" in "green hat"; "bird", "ship" in "blackbird", "kingship"; "-en" in "frighten"; "this" in "this matter", German "die" in "die Frage" and so on).

object: the nominal or pronominal receiver or goal of a transitive action.

opposition: two elements are in mutual opposition if their substitution to one another in the same environment entails a change of meaning (see the examples given under paradigm).

Optative (Copt.): a special conjugation form expressing wish, prayer, promise, prophecy etc.

paradigm: a substitution class, i.e. the class of elements which may be substituted for each other in the same environment with an entailed change of meaning (e.g. the paradigm of the phonetic elements [p], [t], [k], [b], [n], [f], [h] before [i]; of the person/number characteristics in the finite verb, {I...}, {you...}, {he...s}, {she...s}, {it...s}, etc.;
of the elements modifying adjectives ["quite", "more", "less", "very", "fairly"...]; of the elements predicated by "to be" — the noun phrase paradigm ["an artist"], the adjective paradigm ["kind"], the gerund paradigm ["writing"].

particle (Copt.) an element, often insubstantial and weakly stressed, marking a sentence for inter-sentential relationship and often indicating prosodic properties of sentence components (e.g. unstressed "then", German doch, French donc, Greek and Coptic men, gar, de...).

passive voice: a verbal construction type in which the actor expresses the undergoer of the action, while the performer of the action is instrumentally expressed ("She was ardently kissed by her fiancé"). In Coptic, if the actor is not explicitly expressed, the verb is indistinguishable from the 3rd plur. form ("They kissed her").

pattern (Muster, Bauplan; modèle, schéma): a delimited (bounded) construction of paradigms, or the actual form representing this construction (e.g. "consonant + vowel + consonant", "pronoun + {be} + gerund", "noun phrase + finite verb + object" "article + adjective + noun lexeme"; "p-i-n", "I am working", "Snakes eat birds", "a good soldier").

perfect (Copt.): a special conjugation form expressing an action in the past ("He heard", "He has heard").

personal pronoun: element of grammar and lexicon expressing the persons: "I", "you", "he", "she", "it", "we", "they".

phrase: a syntagm that is not a clause; either the combination of a nucleus and an expansion (satellite) ("a young girl", "my friend", "a profession", "a profitable profession"; "three squirrels", "the man who laughed", "a profession which is more profitable", "come quickly", "very well", "rather lazy"), or a syntagm that is not hierarchically analyzable (e.g. prepositional phrase, coordination).

plural: a term in the grammatical noun/pronoun/person category of number, marked as referring to more than one item ("dogs", "three books", "we", "those").

possessed: (a noun) that is marked (in a possession statement, clause or phrase) as belonging to a nominal or pronominal possessor ("the boy's han", "my friend" — "I have a friend").
predicate: see rhyme; (to) predicate: to state as rhyme.

predicative complement (praedikative Ergaenzung; complément attributif, complément d’attribution): the expansion of a verb or of an object of a verb that, expansionless, is informationally incomplete or has a different meaning (“I found him gone”, “He became king”, “He felt sick”, “he turned red”, “I was appointed ambassador”, “watch him go”): a rhematic expansion.

prefix, to prefix: a bound morpheme (“affix”) attached at the head of a word; to attach a morpheme in this position (“un-known”, “de-frost”, “fore-ground”, “more-beautiful”, “je-veux”, ge-schaffen).

premodifier (Copt.): a modifier presetting, information, circumstances or attitude to a clause (“At first...”, “In fact...”, “Surely...”, “Finally, what does all this mean?”, “Frankly, I do not understand your approach”).

prenominal (Copt.): the special form of an element preceding and prefixed to a noun, demonstrative or indefinite/interrogative pronoun.

preposition: a morpheme prefixed to a noun or pronoun marking its relation to other elements in the text (“in”, “with”, “at”, “for”).


presentative: an element presenting a noun or pronoun into discourse, esp. dialogue (“Here is...”, “Look, ...” “voilà”).

presuffixal (Copt.): the special form of an element preceding and prefixed to a suffix pronoun.

preterite: non-durative (“point”) past tense (cf. English past simple: “I wrote”).

pronoun: an element used to refer (by pointing or indicating. by representation, specifically, interrogatively or indefinitely) to a person of dialogue, a noun, proper name or their substitutes (“I”, “you”, “she” [personal pronouns], “who?” [interrogative pronoun]: “anyone”, “many”, “one” [indefinite pronouns], “this” [demonstrative pronoun]).
Proper Name (Eigennamen; nom propre): a naming element with grammatical properties of both noun and the quality of typical high specificity ("John", "Oxford", "January", "Les Pyrénées", "Herr Kleinhaus").

prosody: the phonetic features which characterize sentence structure and are usually not expressed in text segments of their own: including stress, intonation, juncture ("liaison" & pauses).

protasis: the hypothetical ("if...") component of a conditional sentence.

qualification; to qualify: see modification.

quantifier: element marking quantity or number in a noun phrase ("three", "many", "some", "another").

reflexive: an object expansion of a verb containing a reference back to its actor ("She washed herself").

reinforcer, augens (Copt.; also "Verstaerker"): a special set of elements modifying a noun or pronoun and containing a pronominal element referring (mostly back) to this noun ("I myself", "the man, for his part", "the Church, she alone etc.").

relative (Beziehungsform, Relativum; relatif): a clause marked (in Coptic, by special conversion) as adnominal, expanding a definite noun or pronoun ("who...", "whose...", "whom...", "in whom...").

remote (hypothetical or unreal) condition (Irrealis, irrealer Konditionalsatz; condition irréelle): a hypothetical condition that is contrary to reality and conceived as no longer fulfillable ("She would have taken him in her arms if he had not spoken").

resumption, to resume, resumptive (also anaphora, anaphoric): the linking phenomenon of reference or pointing back to a preceding element (in "I realized then that John thought he understood his wife; but in fact he did not, although she invariably saw through him", "then", "he", "him", "she", and "did" are resumptive).

rheme, rhematic (Rhema, Satzaussage, Praedikat; rhème, attribut, propos, prédicat): one of the two main constituents of the information structure of the clause: the constituent that conveys new information about the theme; the main part of the clause message (in the text "The bird sank with beating wings as if the air had
grown too thin to support it. It settled and lay along the water. When they reached it, it was dead, its beak below the water, one wing submerged”, the stretches “sank with beating wings”, “had grown too thin to support [it]” “settled and lay along the water”, “reached [it]”, “dead”, “below the water”, “submerged” are rhematic).

rhetorical question: a type of question formally marked as presupposing an affirmative or negative answer or as unanswerable (bordering on exclamation): (“Can’t you be yourself?” “Is that the way to talk to your elders?” “Why can’t you say so?” “I have to live, haven’t I?”).

satellite: the expansion constituent of a phrase.

second person: the addressed person in dialogue (“you”, “toi”, “vous”).

Second Tense (Copt.) (zweise Tempora; temps seconds): a special conversion of conjugation forms, marking them, in specific contextual circumstances, as either focal (“emphatic”) or as focalizing (“emphasizing”) other components of the verbal sentence (adjunct, actor, object). An apt translation equivalent of Second Tense sentences (esp. into French) is the Cleft Sentence (“Is it for this you have come?”, “It is only on weekends that I find the time to read”, “When was it you saw him last?”).

sentence (Satz, Satzgefüge; phrase): a subtextual complex unit consisting at least of one clause, intermediate between clause and paragraph.

singular: a term in the category of number, unmarked or referring to not more than one item (“dog”, “a dog”, “book”, “a book”, “I”, “this”).

stative (trad. qualitative) (Copt.): a special verb form for expressing passive or intransitive state or a quality (“broken”, “going”, “thirsty”, “impure”).

sonorant (also “liquid”): a type of consonant that is especially prone to be syllabic (in Coptic [l] [m] [n], [ɾ], [ν]).

subject: see theme, topic.

suffix: a bound morpheme (“affix”) attached at the end of a word; in Copt. conventionally used of a special set of suffix pronouns, which are sometimes infixed.
superlinear (or supralinear) stroke (Sahidic Copt.) (Silbenstrich, übereigesetzter Strich; trait superlinéaire): a short stroke placed above consonants or consonantal combinations, indicating their syllabic nature.

suppletion: the use of different externally unrelated forms to replace or supply part of a paradigm ("go" + "went", "am" + "is" + "was" + "be" are instances of suppletion).

syllabic: constituting a syllabic or the center of one.

syllable, syllabic: a complex phonetic unit comprising an opening segment (consonant or sonant), a center (vowel or sonant) and a closing segment (consonant or sonant) (exx. [com-mu-ni-sm], [bot-m], [wa-tr], [se-cu-ri-ty]); constituting a syllable or the center of one.

tsyrangem: the combination of two or more morphs.

synthetic (of grammatical forms): characterized by a close merging or fusion of grammatical and lexemic elements in a word (e.g. "bought", in contrast to "love-d", "feet" in contrast to "hand-s").

tautological: expressing the same twice over, esp. in a different form.

Temporal (Copt.): a special dependent conjugation form expressing time or cause dependence ("when ", "since ").

tense (Tempus; temps): the grammatical category of marking the time reference for a verbal action.

third person: the person not taking active part in the dialogue ("he", "she", "it", "they").

theme, thematic (Thema, Subjekt, Satzgegenstand; thème, sujet): one of the two main constituents of the information structure of the clause: the constituent that least advances the communication; the part containing given or presupposed information; what is being discussed (in the text "The bird sank with beating wings as if the air had grown too thin to support it. It settled and lay along the water. When they reached it, it was dead, its beak below the water, one wing submerged", the stretches "the bird", "the air", "it", "they", "its beak", "one wing" are thematic).

topic, topicalization: what is being discussed; the textual elements that is not the focus of the communication stretch (sentence and
sentence complex); the elements that are context-bound (in the
text: "Yes, it was ugly, the human figure. Man or woman, it made
no difference to Minty. The body's shape, the running nose,
excrement, the stupid postures of passion, these beat like a bird's
heart in Minty's brain", topics are "the human figure", "Man or
woman", "The body's shape, the running nose, excrement, the
stupid postures of passion"); marking as topic.

transitive: (of a verb) governing an object (the verbs in "He felt his
shirt", "He turned out the light", "How many cigarettes do you
smoke per day?").

unmarked (Merkmallos; non-marqué): the term of an opposition that
is neutral with regard to the presence of a specific linguistic feature
(e.g. the singular in many languages as against the plural, with
regard to the feature "number"; in French and many Semitic
languages, the masculine as against the feminine, with regard to the
feature "gender"; in English, the past simple as against the past
progressive, with regard to the feature "mode of action").

variation, variant: the fluctuation of forms, with no entailed difference
in meaning; such a form ("can't" and "cannot", [u] and [u:] as
pronunciation of "-oo-" in some types of English, "that", "wh-", "zero"
as relative àarkers; "well cared-for lady's bicycle" and
"lady's bicycle, well cared-for"; "...pas" and "ne...pas" in some
types of French, are all variants, mainly of stylistic motivation).

verb: a word class with a specific composite set of constructional and/
or morphological properties (e.g. [Coptic] being conjugated in one
of the conjugation patterns, being potentially a member in a
causative: non-causative opposition, etc.; [English] being charac-
terized for person/number and tense, modified by adverbs, etc.).

verboid: a clause form that shares the syntactic properties of a verb but
not its morphological properties (in Coptic, the expression for "to
have").

vowel (Vokal, voyelle): a type of speech sound produced with no
complete closure of the speech organs (e.g. [a] [e] [i] [o] [u]).

zero element, zero morph (Null-Morphem; morphème zéro): a signifi-
cantly absent element (morph); an absence of an element (morph)
that is meaningful (e.g. the plural mark in "fish-0", cf. "fish-es";
the singular "book-∅" as opposed to the plural "book-s"; the 1st and 2nd persons, Present Simple, "I-love-∅", "you-love-∅", as opposed to the 3rd person, "he-love-s"; the masculine form of the adjective in French, as in "bon-∅" vs. "bon-ne"). For "zero article" see "article".

zeroing (Null-Realisierung; réalisation zéro): the (conditioned) realization of an element as zero (e.g. the pronunciation of "p-", "k-", before "n", "s", as in "pneumonia", "knee", "psychology"); the realization of one of the "t"s in the fast pronounced form of "Where did you get to?"; the realization of the finite verb in the response constituent of the dialogue "What would you like?" — "Tea, please").